

DAWN CHRISTADELPHIAN BIBLE CORRESPONDENCE COURSE

Part 2

Contents:



| | | | |
|---------------------------|------|------|-----------------------|
| Section 1 | .... | .... | The Bible |
| Section 2 | .... | .... | God |
| Section 3 | .... | .... | Creation |
| Section 4 | .... | .... | Sin |
| Section 5 | .... | .... | Jesus |
| Section 6 | .... | .... | Christ's Resurrection |
| Part 2 Revision Questions | | | ...Sections 1 - 6 |
| Memory Verses.... | | | |

Part 2

Contents continued:



- Section 7 ... Cain to Isaac 3900 –1900 BC
- Section 8 ... History from Jacob to the Law of Moses
1900-1600 BC
- Section 9 ... History of Israel from the Law
to the Kings 1600 - 1100 BC
- Section 10 ... Kings of Israel – 1100 – 600 BC
- Section 11 ... New Testament Times
- Section 12 ... Return of Christ
- Section 13 ... Responsibility and Duty
- Dawn Christadelphians the Name and its meaning
- Part 2 Revision QuestionsSections 7 – 13
- Memory Verses

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 1

1.0 THE BIBLE

- 1.1 Authorship - written by men who were inspired (*God breathed*) by God to record His message to mankind:- *"In the past God spoke to our forefathers through the prophets at many times and in various ways, but in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son."* — Hebrews 1vs1-2.

"Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet's own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit." - 2 Peter 1v20-21.

The Old Testament was written by men chosen of God, including Moses, Joshua, David, Solomon, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Daniel and other prophets.

- 1.2 Inspiration — *God breathed* — God inspired men to write the Bible which means that it is reliable and without *error* (apart *from* those due to translation). This is seen from the following references in 1.2.1.

- 1.2.1 The Bible Claims — *"All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work."* 2 Timothy 3v16-17
"Your word is truth" - John 17v17.

Also read: 2 Timothy 3v15; Romans 15v4; Psalm 119v105; Psalm 119v130; Psalm 138v2; Isaiah 8v20.

We should read the Bible daily – Proverbs 8v 33-34.

- 1.2.2 Dead Sea Scrolls — Dr Yadin writes concerning the Biblical Dead Sea Scrolls, "What is astonishing is that despite their antiquity and the fact that the scrolls belong to this pre-standardisation period they are, on the whole, almost identical with the Masoretic text known to us. This establishes a basic principle for all future research on texts of the Bible. Not even the hundreds of slight variations established in the texts, affecting mainly spelling and occasionally word substitution, can alter that fact." "Considering what a long time intervened between the Dead Sea Scrolls and the oldest of the medieval manuscripts, one might have expected a much larger number of variant readings and a much wider degree of divergence. It is a matter for wonder that through something like a thousand years the text underwent so little alteration."... "Herein lies its chief importance, supporting the fidelity of the Masoretic tradition." The Dead Sea Scrolls were written about 200 BC.

- 1.2.3 Fulfilled Prophecy — proves that the Bible is not written by human authorship, but God spoke

through men.

Amos 3v7; *“Surely the Sovereign LORD does nothing without revealing his plan to his servants the prophets.”* Also 2 Peter 1v19; Isaiah 45v11.

Examples: The rejection and regathering of Israel, Ezekiel 21v25-27: *“O profane and wicked prince of Israel, whose day has come, whose time of punishment has reached its climax, this is what the Sovereign LORD says: Take off the turban, remove the crown. It will not be as it was: The lowly will be exalted and the exalted will be brought low. A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it.”*

Ezekiel 37v21-22: *“And say to them, “This is what the Sovereign LORD says: I will take the Israelites out of the nations where they have gone. I will gather them from all around and bring them back into their own land. I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel. There will be one king over all of them and they will never again be two nations or be divided into two kingdoms.”*

Also read: Luke 21v20-24; Ezekiel 36, 37 and 38 and Deuteronomy 28 speak of Israel. Whilst the doom of Tyre is given in Ezekiel 26 and the fall of Babylon - Isaiah 14v4-23.

Nebuchadnezzar’s Statue - Daniel 2.

“You are that head of gold” - Nebuchadnezzar, king of
v38 Babylon BC 626/539

“Chest and arms of silver” - Medes and Persians BC v32 539/333

“Belly and thighs of bronze” - Greeks BC 333/129
v32

“legs of iron” v33.

“The fourth Kingdom, strong as iron” - Romans BC 146/AD323
v40

“feet and toes were partly of baked clay and partly of iron ... partly strong and partly brittle” v41-42

“In the time of those kings - the God of heaven will set up a kingdom, that will never be destroyed” v44

1.2.4 Harmony - The Bible is composed of 66 books written over a period of 1,400 years yet it contains one theme and one message. The teaching is the same all throughout the Bible although it was written by different people — i.e. *“The LORD our God, the LORD is one.”*— Deuteronomy 6v4; Isaiah 45v5-6; Mark 12v29.

1.2.5. Science, Archaeology and History - Although the Bible is not a text book on these subjects, whenever it makes reference to them it is found to be correct by the discoveries of man, e.g. *“The Life of the creature is in the blood”* (Leviticus 17v11), a Bible statement made about 1500 BC.. Discovered by man AD 1616 - Wm Harvey.

In 1,000 BC Solomon writes in the Bible about the natural cycle and seasons of the earth —

Ecclesiastes 1v5-7 *"The sun rises and the sun sets, and hurries back to where it rises. The wind blows to the south and turns to the north; round and round it goes, ever returning on its course. All streams flow into the sea, yet the sea is never full. To the place the streams come from, there they return again."* And in Job 26v7 *"He spreads out the northern skies over empty space; he suspends the earth over nothing."*

Archaeology proves that the Bible account of the flood and the existence of many cities like Ur and Jericho is correct. The Assyrian siege of Jerusalem — Isaiah 36 — at the time of Sennacherib is recorded in the Bible and has been confirmed by the archaeologists.

Jordan's Biblical sites [2005]

Giving his trowel a rest, Mr. Mkhjian, a supervisor of archaeological works for the Jordanian Department of Antiquities, leads into the shade of John's recently resurrected grotto on the banks of Jordan River. He sifts through considerable biblical text and archaeological discourse before pointing to a specific patch of sandy ground at the base of some newly excavated steps.

"There is no doubt whatsoever in my mind, based on religious records and all the supporting evidence we've uncovered here, that this is the very spot -- right here at the bottom of the steps -- where Jesus was baptized," he says.

That would make this particular excavation -- one of more than a dozen within the grotto that reveal arches and walls, marble and mosaic floors -- the ruins of Bethabara, a church built about 500 years after Jesus' death to commemorate His exact baptismal place.

- 1.2.6 The Serpent in the Garden of Eden We read in Genesis 3v1-4 *"Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden'?" The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.' " "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman."*

God said that Adam and Eve would die if they touched or eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil which was in the middle of the garden, but the serpent *who was an animal (see verse 1 again)* and not a fallen angel or devil, said they would not die.

In certain parts of the world this 'animal' is eaten when it is cooked over a fire. When cooked two little legs come out near the end of this animal. Now read Genesis 3v14 *"So the LORD God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, "Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals! You will crawl on your belly and you will eat dust all the days of your life."* We call this animal a snake and it is very possible that when the serpent was talking to Eve, it would have been standing and on the same face level as her.

The serpent (animal) does not now stand on these legs as God said in that verse 14 that it was to crawl on its belly all the days of its life. This is another proof that the Bible is true and it is the Word of God.

- 1.3 Purpose of the Bible is to teach us of God and to declare His plan of salvation through the Gospel (the Good News) of the Kingdom of God. Mark 16v15-16: *"He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned."* Also read Luke 8v1.

- 1.3.1. Gospel Preached in the Old Testament: Galatians 3v8-9: *"The Scripture foresaw that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and announced the gospel in advance to Abraham: "All nations will be blessed through you."* So those who have faith are blessed along with

Abraham, the man of faith.” Also read: Luke 24v25-27 “He said to them, “How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?” And beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself” and v 44-45; Acts 28v22-23.

- 1.3.2. Gospel Preached in the New Testament: Matthew 4v23: *“Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease and sickness among the people.”* Also read: Luke 1v32; Matthew 9v35; Acts 1v6-11 *“So when they met together they asked him, ‘Lord, are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?’ He said to them: ‘It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.’ After he said this, he was taken up before their very eyes, and a cloud hid him from their sight. They were looking intently up into the sky as he was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. ‘Men of Galilee,’ they said, ‘why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”*
- 1.4. No hope for mankind apart from the belief in the promises contained in the Bible and obeying its commands by being baptised. Mark 16v15-16: *“He said to them, ‘Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.”* Also read: Acts 15v14; Ephesians 2v11-13; Galatians 1v6-12; 2 Corinthians 4v3; Acts 4v10-12.
- 1.5. The Truth would be lost — Paul, Peter, John and Jude warn us about this — Galatians 1v6-9: *“I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel - which is really no gospel at all. Evidently some people are throwing you into confusion and are trying to pervert the gospel of Christ. But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the one we preached to you, let him be eternally condemned! As we have already said, so now I say again: If anybody is preaching to you a gospel other than what you accepted, let him be eternally condemned!”* Matthew 7v13-14: *“Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it.”* Acts 20v29-30 *“I know that after I leave, savage wolves will come in among you and will not spare the flock. Even from your own number men will arise and distort the truth in order to draw away disciples after them.”* Also read: 2 Thessalonians 2v1-7; 2 Timothy 4v3-4; 2 Peter 3v3-4. 2 John v7. Jude v3-4 *“Dear friends, although I was very eager to write to you about the salvation we share, I felt I had to write and urge you to contend for the faith that was once for all entrusted to the saints. For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord.”* It should not surprise us that so few accept the True Gospel.

BIBLE CORRESPONDENCE COURSE

STUDY 2-1 QUESTIONS

Underline the correct answer to each question and send (address above) the loose copy to your tutor or copy the correct answer in a letter and post to your tutor. Please make sure you keep a copy of the questions and your answers for reference.

Questions

- 1 Why do you want to be a Dawn Christadelphian?
- 2 What are the Dawn Christadelphian beliefs based on?
- 3 The Bible Is:
 - a) 100% human collection of ancient writings
 - b) written partly by God and partly by man
 - c) written by men totally inspired by God
- 4 Is the whole of the Bible true and reliable?
- 5 Are there any mistakes in the Bible?
- 6 Is the Bible inspired? What does this mean? Give a quotation.
- 7 Are there any other God-inspired books apart from the Bible?
- 8 What is the purpose of the Bible?
- 9 What does the Word Gospel mean and what is its message?
- 10 Was the Gospel that Jesus and the Apostles preached, something new?
- 11 Why do you think that other religions do not have the Truth?
- 12 Does the Bible speak of people going away from the True Gospel?
 - a) no
 - b) yes
 - c) It is not mentioned
- 13 Do we need to read the Bible daily?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 2

2.0 GOD

- 2.1. God's Spirit Nature - from everlasting to everlasting, Spirit nature Psalm 93v2 — *"Your throne was established long ago; you are from all eternity."* 1Timothy 1v17: *"Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen."* John 4v24 *"God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth."* Also read: Deuteronomy 33v27; Psalm 90v2. 1Timothy 6v15-16 *"..which God will bring about in his own time--God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone is immortal and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see. To him be honour and might forever. Amen."* Also read: Psalm 104; Isaiah 45v12; Acts 14v15
- 2.2. God is One - Deuteronomy 6v4: *"Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one."* Isaiah 45v5: *"I am the LORD, and there is no other; apart from me there is no God."* Isaiah 46v9 *"I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me."* Mark 12v29: *"The most important one,(commandment)" answered Jesus, "Is this: 'Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one.'" Also read: 1 Timothy 2v5; 1 Corinthians 8v6. There is no reference in the Bible to a Trinity (three in one).*

ONE GOD OR TRINITY? - Few doctrines are more generally accepted by the Christian world than that concerning the Godhead, known as the doctrine of the Trinity. Roman Catholics, the Greek Church, and almost all denominations of Protestants accept the teaching concerning the doctrine of the Trinity. However they may differ upon some points, agree on this, and believe that 'the Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Spirit is God, and yet there are not three Gods, but one God'. They further believe that all three are co-equal and co-eternal. We only know what is true by what God has been pleased to reveal in His Word, the Bible. Therefore, to the Bible we go and soon discover that **there is NO support anywhere in its pages for this popular false doctrine, but quite the reverse.** The Scriptures always teach the Unity of God, not the trinity. **Trinity is not found anywhere in the Bible.** (1 Cor. 8v6) *"Yet for us there is but One God, the Father, from whom all things came."* This is not by any means an isolated passage, but examples of many more might be quoted, all teaching that God is One, not three. Christ had appeared as the Son of God, NOT part of a trinity, had died, been raised from the dead and exalted to the Father's right hand, yet Paul says there is ONE GOD! And who is this? It is THE FATHER. He was the God whom Paul worshipped.

- 2.3. God's Form or Shape — He has a body which is self-sustaining and everything is created by Him and through Him all things exist.

GOD'S FORM/Shape — There is only ONE GOD who has created ALL THINGS, and sustains all things by His power, the spirit. When this is used for special purposes it is called Holy Spirit. God is the Father of ALL and lives in UNAPPROACHABLE LIGHT called in the Bible *"heaven His dwelling place"* and described in the Lords prayer as *"Our Father in heaven hallowed be your Name"* (Matt. 6v9). God's nature is Spirit/immortal nature — our nature is human/mortal nature. We are made in His image. God's form is — Genesis 5v1 *...When God created man, he made him in the likeness of God."*

GOD'S FORM or SHAPE

(Study)

Everlasting – *“Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the world, from EVERLASTING TO Everlasting you are God.”* (Psalm 90v2)

Reason- Brain - Purpose - *“Come now, let us reason together, says the LORD.”* (Isaiah 1v18)

Face - *“But, God said, you cannot see my face, for no one may see me and live.”* (Exodus 33v20). *“It was the light of your face for you loved them.”* (Psalm 44v3). *“A people who continually provoke me to my very face.”* (Isaiah 65v3).

Eyes - sight – *“I will hide my eyes from you.”* (Isaiah 1v15). *“Take your evil deeds out of my sight (eyes)”* (Isaiah 1v16).

Nose - nostrils - The Jews are a “people who continually provoke me to my very face,” ... Who say, *“Keep away; don’t come near ME”...God says “such people are smoke in my nostrils.”* (Isaiah 65v3 and 5).

Ears - listen - *“Even if you offer many prayers I will not listen.”* (Isaiah 1v15). *“Does he who implanted the EAR not hear?”* (Psalm 94v9). *“Lord, turn your EAR to me, come quickly to my rescue.”* (Psalm 31v2).

Mouth- *“The mouth of the LORD God has spoken”* (Isaiah 1v20). *“Man does not live on bread alone but on every word that comes from the mouth of the LORD.”* (Deuteronomy 8v3).

Hand- *“I will turn my (God’s) hand against you:”* (Isaiah 1v25). *“By a mighty hand and an outstretched arm like all the things the LORD your God did for you.”* (Deuteronomy 4v34). *“O God ... with your hand you drove out the nations.”* (Psalm 44v2). *“O God.... it was not by their sword it was your right hand, your arm and the light of your face”* (Psalm 44v3). *“His (God’s) hand is raised.”* (Isaiah 5v25).

Arm - *“Is the LORD’S arm too short?”* (Numbers 11v23). *“with my great power and outstretched arm I made the earth.”* *“The eternal God is your refuge and underneath are the everlasting arms.”* (Deuteronomy 33v27).

Heart - *“The LORD was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and His heart was filled with pain.”* (Genesis 6v6). *“The LORD said in His heart, Never again will I curse the ground because of man.”* (Genesis 8v21).

Feet - *“Moses saw the God of Israel. Under His feet was something like a pavement made of sapphire.”* (Exodus 24v10). *“The LORD rises upon you I will glorify the place of my feet.”* (Isaiah 60v1 3).

Walking - *“The man ... heard the sound of the LORD GOD as He was walking in the garden.”* (Genesis 3v8). *“Enoch walked with God.”* (Genesis 5v24). *“I will walk among you and be your God and you will be My people.”* (Leviticus 26v1 2).

In the Image of God – *“Let us make man in our image in our likeness.”* (Genesis 1v26). *“So God (Elohim) created man in His own Image.”* (Genesis 1v27). *“For in the image of God has God made man.”* (Genesis 9v6). *“Man ought not to cover his head since he is the image and glory of God.”* (1 Corinthians 11 v7). *“. . .the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the Image of God.”* (2 Corinthians 4v4). *“He (Jesus) is the Image of the Invisible God.”* (Colossians 1v15). *“The Son is the radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of His being.”* (Hebrews 1v3). *“Blessed are the pure in heart for they will see God”.* (Matthew 5v8).

God all in all - *“Then the Son himself will be made subject to Him (God) who put everything under him, so that GOD may be **all in all**.”* (1Corinthians 15v22) - The immortal state of the rewarded responsible of all ages is to dwell with GOD and Christ forever.

God can be manifested by His power in any way. He spoke to Moses out of the burning bush - Exodus 3v3-6. He spoke to Elijah on the mountain - 1Kings 19v11-12.

The Scriptures describe man as in the form [likeness] of God. James says that man has been *“made in God’s likeness.”* (James 3v9) and Paul says he is in the image and glory of God (1Corinthians 11v7). Christ was formed as a man and is said to be in *“the image of God”* (2Corinthians 4v4), and *“The Son is the radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of his being.”* (Hebrews 1v3). Moses was told *“... my servant Moses; he is faithful in all my house. With him I speak face to face, clearly and not in riddles; he sees the form of the LORD.”* (Numbers 12v7-8).

2.4 God’s attributes and abilities are complete and beyond our thinking. Job 9v10: *“He performs wonders that cannot be fathomed, miracles that cannot be counted.”* Psalm 94v9: *“Does he who implanted the ear not hear? Does he who formed the eye not see?”* Yet the power of God’s hearing is such that He can hear the cry of a single voice out of millions, across the vastness of space, and all such voices at the same time if He wishes. Read Psalm 31v22 and 2Chronicles 7v15.

In the same way God can see. Matthew 6v4&6; *“So that your giving may be in secret. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you.”* Psalm 34v15. God has total awareness: Matthew 10v29-30 *“Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Father. And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered.”* Psalm 139v1-12. God’s actions are not governed by physical movement as are ours, *“He speaks and it is done”* Psalm 33v6 & 9; Genesis 1v3.

2.5. No human/mortal man can see God (Yaweh). John 1v18; 1Timothy 6v16 — *who alone is immortal and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see.”*

2.6. God’s throne is in heaven, and by His Spirit He sees and knows all things and He is everywhere present. Matthew 6v9: *“This, then, is how you should pray: ‘Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name...’* Psalm 139v7-12 *“Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence? If I go up to the heavens, you are there; if I make my bed in the depths, you are there. If I rise on the wings of the dawn, if I settle on the far side of the sea, even there your hand will guide me, your right hand will hold me fast. If I say, “Surely the darkness will hide me and the light become night around me,” even the darkness will not be dark to you; the night will shine like the day, for darkness is as light to you.”* Also read: 1Kings 8v30; Jeremiah 23v24; Psalm 123v1 — *“I lift up my eyes to you, to you whose throne is in heaven.”*

There is no difficulty when reading Hebrews 1v8 which reads *“But about the Son he says, “Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever, and righteousness will be the scepter of your kingdom.”* This cannot mean that Jesus is God because verse 9 speaks of God (the Father) as the God of Jesus — which is evidence that Christ is not the *“eternal Son”*. Since the Father is the God of Jesus, then clearly Jesus is not himself *“very God”* —see also John 20v17.

2.7 God’s characteristics and attributes include:

Love - *“God so loved the world that He gave His one and only Son [by the Holy Spirit on Mary]”* (John 3v16). Also read 1John 4v7,8 and 16.

Mercy — Exodus 33v19 *“And the LORD said, “I will cause all my goodness to pass in front of you, and I will proclaim my name, the LORD, in your presence. I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion..” Exodus 20v6 - “And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.” Deuteronomy 13v17 “None of those condemned things shall be found in your hands, so that the LORD will turn from his fierce anger; he will show you mercy have compassion on you, and increase your numbers, as he promised on oath to your forefathers.” Also read 2Chronicles 30v9.*

Jealousy - *“You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me... Exodus 20v5. Also read Deuteronomy 5v7-9.*

Anger - *“They made me jealous by what is no god and angered me with their worthless idols.” - Deuteronomy 32v21.*

Just and Righteous - *“He is the Rock, his works are perfect, and all his ways are just. A faithful God who does no wrong, upright and just is he.” - Deuteronomy 32v4.*

- 2.8. God is to be worshipped in truth, obedience, praise and gladness. 1John 2v3-6 *“We know that we have come to know him if we obey his commands. The man who says, ‘I know him,’ but does not do what he commands is a liar and the truth is not in him. But if anyone obeys his word, God’s love is truly made complete in him. This is how we know we are in him: Whoever claims to live in him must walk as Jesus did.” Psalm 119v100-101 “I have more understanding than the elders, for I obey your precepts. I have kept my feet from every evil path so that I might obey your word.” Psalm 100v2 “Worship the LORD with gladness; come before him with joyful songs.” Also read: Matthew 22v37-38; Matthew 19v17; Psalm 150, 2John 6.*
- 2.9. Spirit is the power of God by which all things were created and are sustained. The power which links all matter together, and initiates and controls all changes either chemical or physical. In the Psalms it is described as God’s *“willing spirit”* - Psalm 51v12. *“When you send your Spirit, they are created, and you renew the face of the earth.”* Psalm 104v30. *“By his breath the skies became fair; his hand pierced the gliding serpent.”* - Job 26v13. Also read: Genesis 1v2: Acts 17v24 & 28; Job 33v4; Isaiah 61v1; Psalm 139v7-12.
- 2.10. Holy Spirit is God's power "set apart", which is the meaning of the word "holy", God’s Separate power. To declare His name to men and women for special purposes. This power (Spirit) was possessed by prophets and servants of God in Old Testament times. Holy Spirit means God’s Separate Power. This Separate Power of God is NOT a person. Luke 1v35 *“The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”*

Prophecy - Numbers 11v24 *“So Moses went out and told the people what the LORD had said. He brought together seventy of their elders and had them stand around the Tent. Then the LORD came down in the cloud and spoke with him, and he took of the Spirit that was on him and put the Spirit on the seventy elders. When the Spirit rested on them, they prophesied, but they did not do so again.”*

Spirit - Deuteronomy 34v9 *“Now Joshua son of Nun was filled with the spirit of wisdom because Moses had laid his hands on him.”*

Spirit - 1 Samuel 16v13 *“Samuel took the horn of oil and anointed him in the presence of his brothers, and from that day on the Spirit of the LORD came upon David in power.”*

Spirit - 2 Kings 2v15 *“‘The spirit of Elijah is resting on Elisha.’ And they went to meet him and*

bowed to the ground before him.”

Miracles - Acts 10v38 *“God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good...”*

Prophecy - 2Peter 1v21 *“For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.”*

Birth of Jesus - Luke 1v35 *“The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”*

Teaching - John 14v26 *“But the Counsellor the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you*

The Holy Spirit was given to Christ and the disciples in New Testament times and used to convince their hearers of the Divine nature of their message. Read Acts 1v8; 2v2-4; John 3v2; John 3v34; John 5v36.

The Gift of the Holy Spirit could be passed on by the apostles by the laying on of hands, but those who were given this power could not necessarily pass it on again. Read Acts 8v12-19; *“But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptised, both men and women. Simon himself believed and was baptised. And he followed Philip everywhere, astonished by the great signs and miracles he saw. When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them. When they arrived, they prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit, because the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon any of them; they had simply been baptised into the name of the Lord Jesus. Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. When Simon saw that the Spirit was given at the laying on of the apostles’ hands, he offered them money and said, ‘Give me also this ability so that everyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit.’”*

The power of the Holy Spirit given to mankind finished (stopped) once the teaching of Christ had been established during the first century. See 1Corinthians 13v8 — *“Love never fails. But where there are prophecies, they will cease; where there are tongues, they will be stilled; where there is knowledge, it will pass away.”* The Holy Spirit has given us God’s Written Word - the Holy Bible. **We do not have the Gift of the Holy Spirit today — not even after baptism.**

The Spirit gifts would pass away before the second coming of Christ and as Paul says only *“faith and hope and love would remain.”* (vs. 13). But when Christ returns one will have no need of hope, *“For in this hope we were saved. But hope that is seen is no hope at all. Who hopes for what he already has?”* (Romans 8v24). Nor would one have need for faith, since faith is *“the assurance of things hoped for the conviction of things not seen”.* (Heb. 11v1, R.S.V.). With a period of time in which faith, hope and love remain, the Spirit gifts must finish before the return of Christ.

The Apostle stressed, *“And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love.”* — 1Corinthians 13:v3. This indicates that the Apostle did not consider the Holy Spirit gifts would continue past his age.

The immediate context, verses 9 - 10 is the knowing “in part” and prophesying “in part, *“For we know in part and we prophesy in part, but when perfection comes, the imperfect disappears.”* The term “perfection” is, therefore qualified by the subject in the context - the possession of the knowledge of the purpose of God. The giving of this knowledge in the first

century was dependent upon the presence of believers with the gifts of “knowledge” and “prophesy” until the completion of the New Testament. Since the completion of the New Testament no claimants to Spirit-gift powers have been successful in adding to the perfected, (completed) Scriptures.

- 2.11. Angels - the original word is “Elohim” - meaning God’s mighty ones. The Angels are God’s messengers. The Angels are immortal beings who do God’s will and obey Him. God created the earth, and man, by them. In Genesis chapter 1 the original Hebrew word “God” is “Elohim”.

They are God’s messengers, Psalm 103v20-21 *“Praise the LORD, you his angels, you mighty ones who do his bidding, who obey his word. Praise the LORD, all his heavenly hosts, you his servants who do his will.”*

They have Spirit nature... Psalm 104v4 *“He makes winds (spirits) his messengers, flames of fire his servants.”*

They are immortal, Luke 20v36: *“...they can no longer die; for they are like the angels.”*

They have been seen on earth and appear as men, read: Genesis 1 v26; 18v1 & 2 *“The LORD appeared to Abraham near the great trees of Mamre while he was sitting at the entrance to his tent in the heat of the day. Abraham looked up and saw three men [Angels] standing nearby. When he saw them, he hurried from the entrance of his tent to meet them and bowed low to the ground.”* Genesis 19v1 –2 *“The two angels arrived at Sodom in the evening, and Lot was sitting in the gateway of the city. When he saw them, he got up to meet them and bowed down with his face to the ground. “My lords,” he said, “please turn aside to your servant’s house. You can wash your feet and spend the night and then go on your way early in the morning.”*

“No,” they answered, “we will spend the night in the square.” and 8-9; Acts 1 0v30.

They keep watch over the earth. Read Hebrews 1v14; Psalm 34v7. *“The angel of the LORD encamps around those who fear him, and he delivers them.”*

They are often referred to as God in that they are carrying out His work. Read: Exodus 3v1-4; *“Now Moses was tending the flock of Jethro his father-in-law, the priest of Midian, and he led the flock to the far side of the desert and came to Horeb, the mountain of God. There the angel of the LORD appeared to him in flames of fire from within a bush. Moses saw that though the bush was on fire it did not burn up. So Moses thought, “I will go over and see this strange sight--why the bush does not burn up.” When the LORD saw that he had gone over to look, God called to him from within the bush, “Moses! Moses!” And Moses said, “Here I am.”* See Exodus 23v20-21.

Angels = Messengers, can also be said of men.

“THE ANGELS (HUMAN MESSENGERS) THAT SINNED”

(Study)

2Peter 2v4/Jude 6 — *“And the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home--these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day.”* It is assumed without proof that the ‘angels’ which sinned were spirit creatures. The Greek word ‘aggelos’ translated ‘angel’ means ‘messenger, agent’ and is used of both human and divine messengers. It is used of humans in the following places - Luke 7v24, 27; 9v52; James 2v25.

It is assumed also that the ‘sons of God’ must refer to divine angels. But it refers to humans in Deut. 14v1 RSV; Psa. 82v6; Hosea 1v10— *“Yet the Israelites will be like the sand on the seashore, which cannot be measured or counted. In the place where it was said to them, ‘You are not my people,’ they will be called ‘sons of the living God.’;* Luke 3v38; John 1v12; 1 John 3v1 RSV.

Again, it is assumed that evil power can still be exercised by the **‘angels that sinned’** despite the fact that they are *“reserved in everlasting chains”*. (Why bother to chain these angels if they can still have dangerous power over men and women?) The angels in this **passage are human messengers, not divine angels**. This is proven by the following:- *“The wages of sin is death.”* Romans 6v23

If divine angels were sinners, then they would die. But Jesus said angels do not die - Luke 20v36 - therefore, the angels which sinned were human, not divine angels. All existence in Scripture is bodily existence. There is no Scriptural evidence for asserting bodies can be ‘materialised’ or ‘dissolved’.

There is evidence that the human angels were the 250 princes of the Israelitish congregation which were led in rebellion by Korah, Dathan and Abiram (Num. 16).

Consider the following:-

- a) They were ‘aggeloi’ (angels since they were assigned to ‘minister’ to the congregation - Num. 16v9.
- b) Their ‘first estate’ or ‘principality’ (Jude 6) was that of ‘princes’ or ‘leaders’ RSV (Num. 16v2).
- c) They left this ‘former estate’ when they sought the priesthood - Num. 16v10.
- d) They were delivered into ‘chains of darkness’ when they were swallowed alive by the earth; Num.16v31-33
- e) They were ‘sinners in unjustly claiming to themselves the priesthood’ - Num. 16v10
- f) The judgment is that which will be administered by Christ – 2 Tim. 4v1.

The Greek word for ‘hell’ in 2 Peter 2v4 is ‘tartarus’ which only occurs in this passage. **In popular mythology** ‘tartarus’ meant lower than hell (‘hades’). This is exactly where Korah, Dathan and Abiram went when swallowed up by the earth.

If the devil were an angel rebelling against the will of God, what guarantee is there that believers who, when glorified with Christ, *“like the angels”* (Luke 20v35,36) having tasted the blessings of immortality will not similarly rise against the authority of God. This is not possible as proved by 1Peter 1v4 *“where the inheritance is shown to be that can never perish, spoil or fade.”* (i.e. eternal). Whereas, the ‘devil’ (sin in us) is to be destroyed - Hebrews 2v14.

LUCIFER – who or what is it referring to? – Isaiah 14v12 (Study)

Isaiah 14:12-13 “How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star [or Lucifer In the KJV, or Day star], son of the dawn! You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low the nations! You said in your heart, I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my **throne** above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain.”

Look at Psalm 103v20 “Praise the LORD, you his angels, you mighty ones who do his bidding, who obey his word.” God says they obey His Word! Of course they do, they are God’s messengers.

Lucifer is mentioned in the King James version, but is not mentioned at all in most modern translations, but ‘O morning star’ or ‘Sun of the morning’ or ‘Day star’.

Who is this ‘morning star’ or ‘sun of the morning’? Read Isaiah 14v12 “How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn! You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low the nations!” fallen from heaven means a great height! Turn now to v 4-6 “**you will take up this taunt against the king of Babylon**: How the oppressor has come to an end! How his fury has ended! The LORD has broken the rod of the wicked, the scepter of the rulers, which in anger struck down peoples with unceasing blows, and in fury subdued nations with relentless aggression.” We can see this morning star refers to the King of Babylon – a mighty King! How ruthless he was! What happened to him?

Read Daniel chapter 4 –v4-6 “I, Nebuchadnezzar, was at home in my palace, contented and prosperous. I had a dream that made me afraid. As I was lying in my bed, the images and visions that passed through my mind terrified me.” v8 “Finally, Daniel came into my presence and I told him the dream.” v19 “Then Daniel (also called Belteshazzar) was greatly perplexed for a time, and his thoughts terrified him. So the king said, Belteshazzar, do not let the dream or its meaning alarm you.” Belteshazzar answered, “My lord, if only the dream applied to your enemies and its meaning to your adversaries!” – v25 “You will be driven away from people and will live with the wild animals; you will eat grass like cattle and be drenched with the dew of heaven. Seven times will pass by for you until you acknowledge that the Most High is sovereign over the kingdoms of men and gives them to anyone he wishes.”

Now v28-33 “All this happened to King Nebuchadnezzar. Twelve months later, as the king was walking on the roof of the royal palace of Babylon, he said, “Is not this the great Babylon I have built as the royal residence, by **my** mighty power and for the glory of **my** majesty?” The words were still on his lips when a voice came from heaven, “This is what is decreed for you, King Nebuchadnezzar: Your royal authority has been taken from you. You will be driven away from people and will live with the wild animals; you will eat grass like cattle. Seven times will pass by for you until you acknowledge that the Most High is sovereign over the kingdoms of men and gives them to anyone he wishes.” Immediately what had been said about Nebuchadnezzar was fulfilled.

He was driven away from people and ate grass like cattle. His body was drenched with the dew of heaven until his hair grew like the feathers of an eagle and his nails like the claws of a bird.” v34-37 “At the end of that time, I, Nebuchadnezzar, raised my eyes toward heaven, and my sanity was restored. Then I praised the Most High; I honored and glorified him who lives forever. His dominion is an eternal dominion; his kingdom endures from generation to generation. All the peoples of the earth are regarded as nothing. He does as he pleases with the powers of heaven and the peoples of the earth. No one can hold back his hand or say to him: “What have you done?”

At the same time that my sanity was restored, my honor and splendor were returned to me for the glory of my kingdom. My advisers and nobles sought me out, and I was restored to my throne and became even greater than before. Now I, Nebuchadnezzar, praise and exalt and glorify the King of heaven, because everything he does is right and all his ways are just. And those who walk in pride he is able to humble.”

Nebuchadnezzar fell from power and he was again restored to power . He gave the glory to HIMSELF and not to God. We must at all times walk humbly with our God. See Micah 6v8 "He has showed you, O man, what is good. And what does the LORD require of you? To act justly and to love mercy and to walk humbly with your God."

This passage nowhere mentions the terms "devil", "satan" or "fallen angel". This is *used* in support of a fallen angel.

Lucifer (in the King James Version and older Versions of the Bible) is identified in the narrative, but not with a rebel angel. It is explicitly stated: "*Take up this taunt against the king of Babylon: How the oppressor has come to an end!*"(vs. 4). (The preceding chapter is a prophecy against Babylon itself, but now the prophecy is directed against the king of Babylon).

"*Lucifer*" (KJV) means "*Day Star*" (RSV) "*Morning Star*" (NIV) and the verse employs the figure of the brilliant planet Venus which appears low in the sky just before dawn and climbs higher and higher in the sky until unseen in the day light. The same bright planet is also an "evening star" seen at sunset and going lower and lower until lost beneath the horizon. Hence the figure of Lucifer, king of Babylon, rising in power to his zenith and saying in his *heart* "*I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God*" (which parallels the arrogance of another king of Babylon – Nebuchadnezzar who said: "*Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power and for the honour of my majesty?*" (Daniel 4:30). The "evening star" seen at sunset going lower and lower until lost beneath the horizon portrays the demise of Lucifer (king of Babylon) - "*brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.*" (v15)

"*Ascending to heaven*" is a Biblical saying for increase in pride or exaltation, and "*falling from heaven*", an idiom for complete humiliation. See Jeremiah 51v53 (refers to Babylon); Lamentations 2v1; Matthew 11v23 (refers to Capernaum).

Questions

- 14 What is the nature of God?
- 15 Is God a Trinity?
- a) yes
 - b) no
 - c) He is three persons in One
- 16 Quote a verse to show that God is One.
- 17 In what **form or Shape [not nature]** is God often described in the Bible?
- a) Spirit
 - b) man is in the same form as God
 - c) three in one Spirit being
- 18 Has any man seen God?
- 19 Give some evidence of the greatness and power of God.
- 20 Is God everywhere present?
- 21 Mention some of God's characteristics_ and attributes
- 22 Where does God dwell?
- 23 How is God to be worshipped?
- a) as an idol
 - b) as part of the trinity
 - c) with truth and obedience
- 24 What is the Spirit of God? Give quotation.
- 25 What would happen if God withdrew His Spirit?
- a) all would die
 - b) we would all receive the Holy Spirit
 - c) the earth would go up in flames
- 26 What is the Holy Spirit?
- 27 Is the Holy Spirit a person?
- 28 Why was the Holy Spirit given?
- 29 Does anyone possess the Holy Spirit today?
- a) yes we do after baptism
 - b) no, we do not, not since the end of the 1st/early 2nd century
 - c) yes, we do for healing and miracles
- 30 Who are the Angels and what is their nature?
- 31 What is the Angel's **form or shape [not nature]**?
- a) they are like men
 - b) spirit form
 - c) like men but with wings

- 32 When have Angels been seen on earth and what is the work of Angels today?
- 33 Who or what is Lucifer/Morning Star or Day Star?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 3

3.0 CREATION

- 3.1 In the very beginning “God created the heavens and the earth” Genesis 1v1; Jeremiah 10v12; Job 38v4-11; Isaiah 45v12.
- 3.2 About 6000 years ago the power of God (God's Spirit), **through the angels** (Elohim), created upon this earth all the vegetation and creatures including man, that make up our present-day world. Genesis 1v3-30; “*And to all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air and all the creatures that move on the ground - everything that has the breath of life in it - I give every' green plant for food.*” “And it was so.” Acts 17v24-25. This creation took six literal days and on the seventh day God rested. Genesis 2v2-3. “*By the seventh day God had finished the work he had been doing; so on the seventh day he rested from all his work. And God blessed the seventh day and made it holy, because on it he rested from all the work of creating that he had done.*”
- 3.3 MAN was formed from the dust of the ground on the sixth day, and made in the image of God (Elohim), Genesis 2v7; “*The LORD God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being (soul)..*” Also read Genesis 1v27. “*So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.*”
- 3.3.1 Man was made a LIVING BEING (SOUL) the same as the animals, Genesis 2v7; 1v30; Ecclesiastes 3v19-20 “*Man's fate is like that of the animals; the same fate awaits them both: As one dies, so dies the other. All have the same breath; man has no advantage over the animal. Everything is meaningless. All go to the same place; all come from dust, and to dust all return.*” The original Old Testament word in the Hebrew for “soul” is “Nephesh” or in the New Testament the Greek word is “Psuche” and these are sometimes translated as “person”, “life”, “disposition” or “breath”, and meaning a creature with life. Genesis 1v20-24; Ezekiel 18v4: “*For every living soul belongs to me, the father as well as the son--both alike belong to me. The soul who sins is the one who will die.*” also Proverbs 19v16; Matthew 16v25-26; Genesis 35v18.
- 3.3.2 This living being (soul) was energised and sustained by the “SPIRIT” or “BREATH OF LIFE”. The original word in the Old Testament for this is “Ruach” and in the New Testament is “Pneuma” and are generally translated as “life”, “mind” or “breath” see Genesis 6v1 7; James 2v26.
- 3.3.3 A living being (soul) will die — “*When their spirit (breath) departs, they return to the ground; on that very day their plans come to nothing (they perish);*” Psalm 146v4: “*No one remembers you when he is dead. Who praises you from the grave?*” Psalm 6v5; Ezekiel 18v4; Ecclesiastes 3v19; 12v7; Genesis 7v22; Ecclesiastes 9v5-6 “*For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing; they have no further reward, and even the memory of them is forgotten. Their love, their hate and their jealousy have long since vanished; never again will they have a part in anything that happens under the sun.*”

HAVE I AN IMMORTAL SOUL?

(Study)

If we ask this question of almost any minister or clergyman, he will reply, 'Yes'. If we listen to sermons we gather the same answer. If we consult religious literature, we are assured that we have

A never-dying soul to save
And fit it for the sky.

When we read the Bible, God's Word, we realise that these statements are not true. You say, 'Oh, you must be mistaken!' No; it is no mistake. God's Word, the Bible, is His Inspired Word: and in there God tells us there is no foundation for the idea of having an immortal soul. So we must open our eyes and read what God has to say about this 'immortal soul'.

- 1) We cannot find anything about 'immortal soul' in the Bible. We read about 'soul' or 'being' often enough. We read the word 'immortal', but we do not find the two words joined as in popular preaching. What the Bible says about the two things separately, is out of keeping with the idea that a soul is an immaterial thing as we have been taught, or that immortality belongs to anybody now. *"In his hand is the life of every creature and the breath of all mankind."* (Job 12v10). *"...satisfy his hunger (soul – KJV) when he is starving."* (Proverbs 6v30). *"...set apart as tribute.. ..one ("soul" KJV) out of every five hundred, whether persons, cattle, donkeys, sheep or goats"* (Numbers 31v28). *"The soul who sins is the one who will die."* (Ezekiel 18v20). *"...seek glory honour and immortality..."* (Romans 2v7). *"When the perishable has been clothed with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality..."* (1 Corinthians 15v54). *"..God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone is immortal and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see."* (1 Timothy 6v15-16). If every living thing has a soul (person), and a soul (person) can eat, and be handled and can die, and if immortality be something that men have to seek for now, and to put on when Christ comes, it follows that the notion we have been brought up in - that the soul is an invisible thing that cannot die - must be a mistake.
- 2) We read that man is mortal now; that death has entered the world by sin; that where sin is, death must be, and that death will only be destroyed at the end of Christ's reign on earth which will last 1,000 years. *"Mortal man"* (Job 4v17) *"Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned."* (Romans 5v12). *"The wages of sin is death"* (Romans 6v23). *"Those things result in death"* (Romans 6v21) *"The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind controlled by the Spirit is life and peace;"* (Romans 8v6). *"For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death."* (1 Corinthians 15v25-26). *"He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away. He who was seated on the throne said, 'I am making everything new!'"* (Revelation 21v4-5).

If all this is so, how can the doctrine of the immortality of the soul be true? Because if man is **human/mortal**, then he is not **everlasting/immortal**; and if death has passed upon all men, then it must be wrong to say that he is *never-dying* and cannot die. If death is not a fact, how can Christ take it away?

- 3) We read that the hope of immortality is to be realised by a change of the mortal body if alive when Christ comes, or by a resurrection of that body if in the grave for a similar change.

"...We eagerly await a Savior ... the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the power that enables him to bring everything under his control, will transform our lowly bodies so that they will be like his glorious body" (Philippians 3v20-21). *"For the perishable must clothe itself with the*

imperishable, and the mortal with immortality" (1Corinthians 15v53). "We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed." (verse 50). "For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first." (1Thessaloians 4v16). "...All who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out--those who have done good will rise to live" (John 5v29). "For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed but to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life." (2Corinthians 5v4). How can this be if we were already immortal, and if that immortality resided in an invisible spirit which goes away from the body when we die?

- 4) We read that the dead are to be judged at the coming of Christ; that the righteous are to be rewarded, and the wicked punished at that time. "Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead,..." (2Timothy 4v1). "For the Son of Man is going to come in his Father's glory with his angels, and then he will reward each person according to what he has done." (Matthew 16v27). "We must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ" (2Corinthians 5v10). "The time has come for judging the dead, and for rewarding your servants the prophets." (Revelation 11v18). "He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power" (2Thessalonians 1v8-9). How can we understand this, if we are to believe that when men die they 'go to judgment', and if accepted enter heaven to be rewarded, or descend to hell to be punished? What is the meaning of a day of judgment if it is all settled before that day arrives?
- 5) When we read from God's Word, the Bible, that when we die we are without feeling, or memory, or existence, and that we are incapable of exercising any faculty or rendering any praise that in fact, we "know nothing"... "No one remembers you (God) when he is dead." (Psalm 6v5). "...the dead know nothing; they have no further reward, and even the memory of them is forgotten. Their love, their hate and their jealousy have long since vanished; never again will they have a part in anything that happens under the sun" (Ecclesiastes 9v5-6). They return to the ground; "...On that very day their plans come to nothing." (Psalm 146v4) "It is not the dead who praise the LORD, those who go down to silence;" (Psalm 115v17). "For the grave cannot praise you, death cannot sing your praise;" (Isaiah 38v18). We can understand this if man is a poor mortal, who ceases to exist, and who when dead, **is really dead**; and then we can understand the need for resurrection, at Christ's re-appearing. But how can we reconcile such teaching with the idea that when we die we shall not be dead, but more alive, and know more than we do now? We cannot reconcile the two things; and as one must be right and the other wrong, we conclude that the **Bible is right**, and popular teaching wrong. **The Bible teaches that we do not have an immortal soul. We do not go to heaven when we die and we are not tormented in the grave (hell).**
- 3.4 Woman was created out of man and was given to him as a help. Read Genesis 2v21-23; "So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man's ribs and closed up the place with flesh. Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man." Genesis 2v18 and 2v20-24.
- 3.4 The nature of man before he sinned was "very good" — not mortal or immortal - Genesis 1v31. "God saw all that he had made, and it was very good. And there was evening, and there was morning--the sixth day."

Questions

- 34 Who created the heaven and the earth?
- a) God
 - b) Jesus
 - c) God and Jesus
- 35 Who actually performed the work of creating life on the earth?
- 36 How long did it take?
- a) 7 days
 - b) 6,000 years
 - c) 6 days
- 37 What happened on the seventh day?
- 38 On which day was man created?
- a) 4th day
 - b) 5th day
 - c) 6th day
- 39 What was man created from?
- 40 How was woman formed?
- a) from the dust of the ground
 - b) from Adam's rib
 - c) from the soil
- 41 What was her special duty to man?
- 42 Man became a "living being or soul". What is this?
- 43 Are animals "living beings or souls"?
- 44 Can a soul die? Give quotation
- 45 What is an original word for "soul"?
- 46 How should 'soul' be translated?
- 47 What is the "spirit" of man?
- a) the soul that lives on after death
 - b) Life and breath of man
 - c) the sinful part of man
- 48 What is an original word for spirit?
- 49 How should this 'spirit' be translated?
- 50 What happens to man when he dies?
- a) he goes to heaven
 - b) he goes to the grave
 - c) his spirit lives on for ever

- 51 Was man created immortal?
- a) yes he was immortal
 - b) no he was mortal
 - c) no he was 'very good'
- 52 What did God say of His Creation when it was finished?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 4

4.0 SIN — was the disobedience to the commandments of God by Adam and Eve. Genesis 3v1-7. God said *“You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.”*... *“When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.”* Since then all men have sinned (except Christ) by disobeying God's Law. *“..but each one is **tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death.**”* - James 1v14-15.

Romans 5v12 — *“Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man (Adam), and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned.”* *“...for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”* Romans 3v23. This power of sin that is in all of us is termed, in the Bible as the “DEVIL”. Also read 1John 3v4.

Sin is the greatest hinderance to mankind, by it we become false accusers and slanderers to others. Man is not by nature good: Jeremiah 17v9; James 1v14.

4.1 Devil - the original word is ‘Diabolos’ and, literally translated means ‘slanderer’, ‘liar’ or ‘false accuser’; *“In the same way, their wives are to be women worthy of respect, not **malicious talkers** but temperate and trustworthy in everything.”* 1 Timothy 3v11. *“Likewise, teach the older women to be reverent in the way they live, not to be **slanderers** or addicted to much wine, but to teach what is good.”* Titus 2v3

A man or woman who falsely accuses can be referred to as a ‘devil’. When Jesus spoke of Judas He said, *“Have I not chosen you, the Twelve? Yet one of you is a devil!”* John 6v70.

‘Diabolos’ also means ‘to cross a line’ in the way that Adam sinned by crossing over the line defined by God's law.

THE DEVIL – who or what is it?

(Study)

The word **DEVIL** from the Greek word **diabolos**, according to Strong's Concordance, means "a false accuser" - "a slanderer" - "malicious talkers" and is applied to humans in 1Timothy 3v11; 2Timothy 3v3; Titus 2v3. It is linked with evil in a man's heart. Judas was called 'a devil' – "a false accuser" by Christ in (John 6v70). He falsely accused Jesus who was innocent. Matthew 27v4.

Rev. 2v10 – "Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you..." (Pagan authorities accused and hunted Christians and put them into prisons).

Heb 2v14. The devil held the power of death (our sinful nature) "Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death - that is, the devil." Jesus took away sinful nature in that he committed no sin, having overcome the flesh, he overcame the power of death, even the devil.

Heb 9v26 "Then Christ would have had to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself." Jesus was born flesh and blood so that he might destroy the works of the devil.

James 1v14. "... but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed..." Jesus destroyed the devil (*sin*) through his death, by obedience to his Father's commands and opened up the way of life — Romans 5v19.

John 5v30. "I seek not to please myself..." John 4v34. "My food," said Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me."

Matt. 26v39. Jesus did not want to suffer and appeals to his Father... "My Father, if it is possible, may this cup be taken from me. Yet not as I will, but as you will." But it was necessary for Jesus to suffer a cruel death at the hands of wicked men...

John 3v14. "Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert so the Son of Man must be lifted up."

Luke 9v23. "If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross daily and follow me."

Although we inherit Adam's sinful nature, it is possible to overcome temptation by obeying God's law. So Jesus said, "To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne." Revelation 3v21...

Obedience to God's WORD... brought life. The scripture speaking of Jesus says, "God raised him from the dead, freeing him from the agony of death." Acts 2v24. By contrast, disobedience brought death, 1Corinthians 15v21-22 "For since death came through a man... For as in Adam all die." Death was and is the punishment for sin which is disobedience to God's commandments.

The first Adam disobeyed God's commandments which resulted in death. The second Adam (Christ) was obedient — and became "a life giving spirit ..." 1Corinthians 15v45.

"The gift of God ..." Romans 6v23.

"God himself will provide the lamb for the burnt offering..." Genesis 22v8.

"But we see Jesus... taste death for everyone." Hebrews 2v9.

"God made him who had no sin (Christ) to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God." 2Corinthians 5v21.

“The sting of death is sin.” 1Corinthians 15v56.
 “He committed no sin...” 1Peter 2:22,
 “You will strike his heel.” Genesis.3v15 – fulfilled by Jesus when he died on the cross

Jesus died at the hands of sinful men on the cross and he was in the grave for three days. Jesus was wounded in the heel, but it was only a temporary wound because he was raised to life again. He was raised to life because he did not sin and the ‘grave could not hold him’.

Christ needed to be saved from his human nature — Hebrews 5v7 — “During the days of Jesus’ life on earth, he offered up prayers and petitions with loud cries and tears to the one who could **save** him from death, and he was **heard** because of his reverent submission.” Jesus prayed and cried to God his Father who was able to save him from death. “Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him.” Hebrews 5v8-9.

Disobedient human nature = the devil. “ ... who do not live according to the sinful nature but according to the Spirit.” Romans 8v4 . “All have sinned” - Romans 3:23.

The devil was destroyed by the obedience of Christ in his death — Romans 5v19 — “For just as through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.”

Serpent (animal nature) is the symbol of **sin power** — Romans 6v6 — “For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin.” Also Romans 8v6.

The serpent was a “beast of the field” — a “crafty animal” — Genesis 3v1
 “Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals” — Genesis 3v14

Wise men and women after the flesh are governed by human standards — 1Corinthians 1v26;
 Romans 8:7

4.2 Satan - translated means ‘Adversary’ or ‘Opposer’ and can be used in both good and bad contexts.

A Good Adversary/Opposer: The Angel in Numbers 22v22-35 — “But God was very angry when he (Balaam) went, and the angel of the LORD stood in the road to **oppose** him. Balaam was riding on his donkey, and his two servants were with him.”.... “The angel of the LORD said to Balaam, “Go with the men, but speak only what I tell you.” The good adversary/opposer here was the Angel who prevented Balaam from putting a curse on the people of Israel

A Bad Adversary/Opposer - Matthew 16v23 - Although Peter was a good man and he definitely did not want Jesus to die - Jesus replied v23 Jesus turned and said to Peter, “Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; **you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men.**” .” - so Peter was going against **the will of God**. Also another example is in 1 Chronicles 21v1.

LUKE 10v18 (Study)

LUKE 10V18 "...I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven..."

Some feel that this passage is connected with Isaiah 14v12 to support the doctrine that Satan, a rebel angel, was cast from heaven after a great war with the forces of the Almighty. See Study on 'Lucifer'.

Satan (Greek: adversary/opposer) is used by Jesus to Peter in Matthew 16v23.

The disciples cures of the sick were so rapid and complete that it was compared to 'Lightning falling from heaven'.

ANOINTED CHERUB (Study) - Ezekiel 28v13-15

"Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God... Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth... Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou was created, till iniquity was found in thee" (KJV). "You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone adorned you: ... on the day you were created they were prepared. You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God;"

This passage is cited to prove that Satan is a fallen angel.

This passage nowhere mentions the terms "devil", "satan", or fallen angel". The argument in support of a fallen angel" interpretation, is therefore, an *inferred* argument.

The anointed cherub is identified in the passage, but not with a rebel angel: *"Son of man, say to the ruler of Tyre,..... "(v2). In chapters 26 and 27 prophecies recorded the then impending doom of the city of Tyre.*

In chapter 28v11-12 *"The word of the LORD came to me: "Son of man, take up a lament concerning the **king of Tyre** and say to him:"*

Some questions require answering:

- a) In chapters 26 and 27 of Ezekiel's prophecy the destruction of Tyre is recorded - and literally enough, since today the site of ancient Tyre is like *"the top of a rock... a place to spread nets upon"* and has never been rebuilt. (Ezekiel 26v14). The remainder of chapter 28 is a prophecy directed against Sidon and the future restoration of Israel. Why, in this context, would the prophet introduce a "revelation" about the origin of Satan?
- b) If Satan is a rebel angel, why is he called *"a man"*? (v2,9)
- c) It is said by J.W.'s that Satan rebelled *"because of developing a greed for power over mankind"*. But how is this to be squared with v4,5 *"By your wisdom and understanding you have gained wealth for yourself and amassed gold and silver in your treasuries. By your great skill in trading you have increased your wealth, and because of your wealth your heart has grown proud."*?
- d) Since Jesus stated that angels do not die: *"they (children of the resurrection) can no longer die; for they are like the angels."* Luke 20:36. How then is Satan to die *"at the hands of foreigners"* (v10), to be devoured by fire and reduced *"to ashes"* (v18), and *"will be no more"* v19?

"Is no secret hidden from you?" (v3). This is an illustration of the way in which *"For the people of this world are more shrewd in dealing with their own kind than are the people of the light."* (Luke. 16v8). The king of Tyre was wise in his ability to increase his riches through trade (v5, Zechariah 9v2), but this does not mean that he was wiser than Daniel in divine matters.

"You were in Eden, the garden of God." (v13). It is reasoned by the J.W.'s that the real character must have been Satan since the king of Tyre could not have lived contemporary with Adam and Eve. But the passage does not require the King of Tyre to have lived contemporary with Adam and Eve. It just requires the king to have been in Eden, the garden of God, but without specification as to time. Eden appears to have been an extensive area in which the garden was placed in the east. (Genesis 2v8; cf. Ezekiel 27v23). In figurative language, Pharaoh, king of Egypt is depicted as being a cedar in Lebanon taller than any of the other trees of Eden (trees are used here symbolically for nations). (Ezekiel 31v2,3, 31v8,9,16,18). But this reference to Eden does not imply that Pharaoh must have lived contemporary with Adam and Eve.

"You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you." (v15). It is sometimes argued that the passage cannot refer to the literal king of Tyre since he was not *"blameless"*. The Hebrew word *"tamim"* translated *"blameless"* means *"perfect, plain, whole, complete"*. Noah was a *"righteous man, blameless among the people"* (Genesis 6v9 - same Hebrew word, *"tamim"*), but there is no question of his being an angel.

It is argued by some that the literal king of Tyre would have been procreated, not created (v13,15), therefore, the passage must refer to an angel. But the Hebrew word, *"bara"* translated *"create"* means *"to be prepared, formed, created."* The same word is used for the creation of *"people"* (Psalm 102v18) and the Ammonites (Ezekiel 21v30). Clearly in these passages the word cannot imply the creation of angels.

Tyre occupied a privileged position in its relationship to Israel. David and Hiram had been close friends (2Samuel 5v11; 1Kings 5v1, 6,7,10) and Hiram and Solomon had made a league in which Hiram supplied materials for the building of the temple. (1Kings 5v12,17-18). The language of Ezekiel 28v13-18 is taken from Israelitish worship and used symbolically for the relationship of Israel and Tyre (by implication suggesting the divine favour which rested upon Tyre because of its association with Israel). Consider the following:

- a) *"Every precious stone adorned you"* (v13); *"you walked among the fiery stones."* (v14). This is an allusion to the stones set in the breastplate of the high priest of Israel (Exodus 39v10-14). They were *"fiery stones"* because of the way they would shine when exposed to the brilliance of the *glory* of the sanctuary. These *fiery stones* symbolised the twelve tribes of Israel. (Exodus 39v14). The king of Tyre walked in the midst of these stones of fire when he moved among the children of Israel (as in the preparation of the materials for the temple). The position of Israel in the divine purpose provided a *"covering"* for Tyre on the basis of the decree in Genesis 12v3: *"I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you I will curse"*. God blessed the house of Potiphar because of Joseph, *"...the LORD blessed the household of the Egyptian because of Joseph. The blessing of the LORD was on everything Potiphar had, both in the house and in the field."* (Genesis 39v5). Similarly, Tyre was *"covered"* by Israel.
- b) *"You were anointed as a guardian cherub"* (v14). The cherubim were figures of beaten gold at either end of the mercy seat. (Exodus 37v7-9). Their wings overshadowed the mercy seat with which they were of one piece. (Exodus 25v19-20). Although the translation of the Hebrew is uncertain, the suggestion may be that Tyre as a great mercantile power was privileged to cast its *"wings"* over Israel. It was the abuse of this

exalted position that was a factor in the ruin of Tyre. (v4-5).

- c) *"You were on the holy mount of God."* (v14). This holy mountain is Mt. Zion, the future site of God's house of prayer for all people. (Isaiah 2v2-3, 5-7). This *"holy mount of God"* is on the earth, not symbolically in heaven as J.W.'s assert. (See Ezekiel 20v40).
- d) *"By your many sins and dishonest trade you have desecrated your sanctuaries."* (Ezekiel 28v18). This verse may imply that Tyre had set up forms of worship similar to that of Israel. Hiram *"had always been on friendly terms with David"* and rejoiced with Solomon in the building of the temple. (1Kings 5v1-12). The king of Tyre would no doubt have learned about God's kingdom in Israel from these two kings of Israel. Or, the verse may be interpreted this way: Tyre's sanctuaries were in Israel where the divine presence and favour were manifest. But Tyre failed to appreciate its privileged association with Israel. When Nebuchadnezzar came down into Jerusalem (586 B.C.), the ruler of Tyre said: *"Aha! The gate to the nations is broken, and its doors have swung open to me; now that she lies in ruins I will prosper,"* (Ezekiel 26v2). In so saying, Tyre had spoken her own just punishment according to the decree of Genesis 12v3: *"I will... and whoever curses you I will curse ."* Tyre, in her self-centred mercantile interests, had polluted the sanctuaries and was herself to be reduced to ashes.
- e) *"So I made a fire come out from you, and it consumed you, and I reduced you to ashes on the ground in the sight of all who were watching."* (v18). Tyre could not be exempted from punishment in violating her privileged relationship with Israel. When Nadab and Abihu treated the sacred as secular, *"So fire came out from the presence of the LORD and consumed them, and they died before the LORD."* (Leviticus 10v2). Similarly, Tyre had failed to make a difference between the holy and unholy. It was, therefore, to be destroyed.

4.3 Devils/Demons/Evil Spirits - this is a different word from *diabolos* (*devil*) and is a translation of the Greek word *'daimon'*. This was a word used to describe people who had mental or physical disabilities. The popular conception in Christ's day was that such people were afflicted by some evil force. When a person was cured, they were said to be rid of the evil force and the term *"casting out devils"* is used meaning curing a person's illness. Read Matthew 17v14-18; Luke 9v42. Mark 9v17-20 *"A man in the crowd answered, 'Teacher, I brought you my son, who is possessed by a spirit that has robbed him of speech. Whenever it seizes him it throws him to the ground. He foams at the mouth, gnashes his teeth and becomes rigid. I asked your disciples to drive out the spirit, but they could not'. 'O unbelieving generation,' Jesus replied, 'how long shall I stay with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring the boy to me.' So they brought him. When the spirit saw Jesus, it immediately threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell to the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth."* Today we would call this a fit.

Demons/Evil Spirits (Study)

We understand '*demons*' or '*evil spirits*', referred to in the New Testament as the language of the day for sicknesses. The Greek word for demons is '*daimon*'. Illnesses were attributed to supposed evil spirits. Read Mark 9v20. It would be obvious to us that the child had *epileptic fits*. Also the woman "*whom satan has kept bound*" had *Osteo Arthritis* - read Luke 13v16. Matthew 8v16-17 shows quite clearly that the '*devils*' or '*demon possessed*' were infirmities and sicknesses. It refers us back to "*Moses and the prophets*" the Old Testament Truth of Isaiah 53v4. "*He said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.'*" - Luke 16v31. Today we have the leftovers of the Greek superstition when we call an insane person, a luna-tic (moon struck) when we know that it refers to an illness of the mind.

4.4 Punishment for the sin committed by Adam and Eve was **death** - in accordance with God's word. Read Genesis 2v16-17 — "*And the LORD God commanded the man, 'You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of **the knowledge of good and evil**, for when you eat of it you will surely die.'*" Genesis 3v19; Ezekiel 18v4. Those who say that death is the beginning of a new life **are repeating the serpent's lie**, "*but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'*" "**You will not surely die,**" the serpent said to the woman. - Genesis 3v3-4. Death is not the gateway to heaven: note the words of Peter concerning the king of Israel, "*Brothers, I can tell you confidently that the patriarch David died and was buried, and his tomb is here to this day... For David did not ascend to heaven, and yet he said, 'The Lord said to my Lord: 'Sit at my right hand'.*" - Acts 2v29 and 34. "*All these people were still living by faith when they died. They did not receive the things promised; they only saw them and welcomed them from a distance...*" "*These were all commended for their faith, yet none of them received what had been promised. God had planned something better for us so that only together with us would they be made perfect.*" - Hebrews 11v13 and 11v39-40. Read John 3v13 "**No one** has ever gone into heaven except the one who came from heaven--*the Son of Man.*"

4.4.1 Death is the result of sin: "*For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.*" - Romans 6v23. Because of sin all men are mortal - under the power of death: "*Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned...*" Romans 5v12. Also read Genesis 3v19,22-24. 1Corinthians 15v22.

Man dies just like the animals. "*Man's fate is like that of the animals; the same fate awaits them both: As one dies, so dies the other. All have the same breath; man has no advantage over the animal. Everything is meaningless. All go to the same place; all come from dust, and to dust all return.*" Ecclesiastes 3v19-20.

The dead Perish. "*For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing; they have no further reward, and even the memory of them is forgotten.*" Ecclesiastes 9v5. Also read Psalm 6v5; Psalm 146v3-4.

4.4.2 Hell is the grave, 1Corinthians 15v55. The original Hebrew word '*Sheol*'. is "**grave**" meaning a '**covered place**'. Read Psalm 31v17; 9v17; Job 14v13; Jonah 2v2. Original Greek word is '*Hades*' and also means "**grave**" - Acts 2v31. This 'covered place' is where the good and the wicked go when they die. Genesis 3v19.

ARE THERE HELL TORMENTS?

[Study]

When trying to find out the meaning of Scripture, we must always put plain scripture first and then let Scripture interpret Scripture. So what is meant by hell torment? Plain Scripture first — “.. *the dead know nothing;*” - Ecclesiastes 9v5 then referring to the day that they die, scripture says, “*that very day their plans come to nothing*” – Psalm 146v4. In which case – the wicked cannot be conscious to suffer eternal punishment.

Jude 7 – Eternal Fire – As the result of their immorality and sexual perversion God caused Sodom and Gomorrah to suffer the punishment of an eternal fire, which says Peter resulted in the cities being burnt to ashes – 2Peter 2v6. So the idea of “burning them to ashes” is a fire that will consume matter until there is nothing left to consume.

These two passages serve as an illustration:

- 1 Although God speaks of “*My anger and my wrath will be poured out on this place, on man and beast, on the trees of the field and on the fruit of the ground, and it will burn and not be quenched.*” – Jeremiah 7v20. Yet nevertheless God will have mercy upon Zion when the set time is come – Psalm 102v13. Jerusalem will be the city of the great King – Matthew 5v35; Luke 1v32-33.
- 2 “*I will kindle an unquenchable fire in the gates of Jerusalem that will consume her fortresses.*” – Jeremiah 17v27. The fire was not put out until it had consumed all that could be burned. The fire is not now burning. And so we can now understand the meaning of Christ’s words in Mark 3v29 “*But whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven; he is guilty of an eternal sin (condemnation).*”

If Jesus, through his death **destroyed** the devil (sin), as it states in Hebrews 2v14 – would God allow wicked people to live forever in torment? No! God is a merciful God. God’s character is denied if God is the merciful Being of order, justice and harmony of Scripture. How is it possible that with all His foreknowledge and omnipotence, He can permit the majority of the human race to come into existence with no other destiny than to be tortured? What would you think of a man who tortured even a savage dog for a week? Hell in the Bible simply signifies the grave – Psalm 16v10 “*Because you will not abandon me to the grave, nor will you let your Holy One see decay*”

Another Greek word “**Gehenna**” is the name of a valley outside Jerusalem where the city rubbish, including the bodies of criminals, were burnt. See Mark 9v43.

GEHENNA

[Study]

Gehenna is the Greek form of Ge-Hinnom. The valley of Hinnom to the East and South of Jerusalem is deep and narrow, with steep rocky sides.

The words ‘*fire of hell*’ used by Jesus in Matthew 5v22 refers to Gehenna. This place called the ‘valley of Hinnom where all the rubbish of Jerusalem was thrown’ was the refuse dump or cesspool of the city. Perpetual fires were kept up for the consumption of the bodies of criminals, carcasses of animals, and whatever else was combustible.

Sennacherib’s army of 185,000 men were killed here in one night — Isaiah 37v36. Albert Barnes the Historian says, “It became extremely offensive. The sight was terrific, the air was polluted and pestilential, and to preserve it in any manner pure, it was necessary to keep fires continually burning there.” The extremely loathsomeness of the place, the filth and decaying matter, the corruption of the atmosphere, and the lurid fires blazing by day and night, made it one of the most appalling objects

with which the Jew was acquainted. It was called the Gehenna of fire, and was the image which our Saviour often employed to denote the future punishment of the wicked. There is not the slightest support given here for the idea of eternal torment, or indeed to torment at all. The purpose of Gehenna fire was not to preserve, but to consume and utterly destroy.

If anyone stumbles over the phrases '*everlasting fire*' and '*eternal fire*', the explanation is very simple. The words '*everlasting*' and '*eternal*' are the same words in the original. Matthew 18v8-9 and Jude 7. That it refers to the future punishment of sin should be quite plain, while it is an instance of its past punishment. "*In a similar way, Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as an example of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire.*" . This should be quite plain and conclusive. The fire that destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah burnt out ages ago. The destruction has been everlasting, and this instance is expressly said to be an example of eternal fire, so that we may be able to understand the terrible reality of that future infliction of Divine vengeance in store for the unrighteous.

In view of what Gehenna was according to Jewish knowledge, as already seen, Christ's language could not fail to create a powerful and awful impression regarding the final doom of the non-repentent. It was well fitted to act as a strong deterrent upon those proud and wicked Jews, who were about to fill up their cup of iniquity by branding as an imposture and blasphemer – Jesus, the Son of God, their True Messiah.

It is sometimes argued that this view does away with the doctrine of everlasting punishment taught by Jesus in Matthew 25v46 where he says "*Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.*" This objection is without foundation. The above passage does not state the nature of the punishment, only its duration. The punishment of sin is eternal in the absolute sense. That it will never come to an end, but the punishment is **not** eternal torment.

The Bible nowhere declares this to be the penalty for sinners. "*The wages of sin is death*" not an unhappy life. Life is to be the exclusive possession of the righteous. God, from the very first, made arrangements to prevent the existence of an immortal sinner — Genesis 3v22-24 - "***He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever.***"

4.4.3 Curse upon the Serpent. The serpent was an animal which God had given the power of speech. He slandered, or falsely accused, God in saying that death would not be the punishment for disobedience - Genesis 3v1, 4-5. For this the serpent was punished: "*Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, 'Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?''*" - Genesis 3v1. "*So the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, "Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals! You will crawl on your belly and you will eat dust all the days of your life."* Genesis 3v14.

4.4.4 Curse upon the woman. Genesis 3v16 - sorrow in childbirth, desire to her husband, man to rule over her. "*To the woman he said, 'I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you.'*" 1Timothy 2v11-15 "*A woman should learn in quietness and full submission. I do not permit a woman to teach or to have authority over a man; she must be silent. For Adam was formed first, then Eve. And Adam was not the one deceived; it was the woman who was deceived and became a sinner. But women will be saved through childbearing...if they continue in faith, love and holiness with propriety.*" See 1Peter 3v1-4

4.4.5 Curse upon the man. The earth was also cursed, making it necessary for man to spend his days working to provide the food he required in order to live. "*To Adam he said, Genesis 3v17-19. 'Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, You must not eat of it, Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the*

plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”

4.4.6 Adam and Eve were now mortal (previously after creation they were ‘very good’) due to their disobedience to God and were driven from the Garden of Eden to prevent them from eating of the tree of life and living forever as immortal sinners. Genesis 3v22-24 *“The LORD God said, “The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live for ever.” So the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken. After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life..”*

4.4.7 Covering for sin. Adam and Eve covered their nakedness (which had become a symbol of sin) with fig leaves. This was not acceptable to God. Since sin had entered the world, and death as a result of sin, the sin of Adam and Eve could only be covered in God’s eyes by the shedding of blood in death – Paul writes, *“without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness.”* Hebrews 9v22. This was to be taught by the death of an animal and Adam and Eve were provided with animal skins as a covering. Genesis 3v21. *“The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.”* In this way the slaying of an animal as a covering for sin was instituted and was thereafter required by God through the Law of Moses until Christ, the perfect sacrifice, came upon earth - John 1v29. *“The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, “Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!”* Galatians 3v24-25; ***“So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith.. Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law”*** The law was given by God through Moses to Israel, the Jews, to enable them to be acceptable and obedient to God. With the coming of Christ, and his death and resurrection, offerings under the law finished. Hebrews 8v13 *“By calling this covenant ‘new’, he has made the first one obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear..* Hebrews 10v1-10. *“And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.”*

The law of Moses was given by God through his servant Moses to control the lives of the Israelites when they left captivity in Egypt to the time of the crucifixion of Jesus Christ their Saviour and Messiah. This was a period of some 1500 years from about BC 1500 to AD 30. During that period of time Israel had to follow the strict requirements of the law in all its detail to be acceptable to God their Father. Sacrifices were required both to thank God for his goodness and to obtain forgiveness or atonement where the law had been disobeyed or broken. However, that law could not bring eternal life, it could only bring a covering of sins to the offerer of the sacrifice correctly selected and prepared.

With the birth of Jesus Christ as the Lamb of God to take away sins, we have the perfect sacrifice for sins offered once for all for those who are willing to believe in him and the true Gospel of the Kingdom that he preached, and be baptised. The past sins of the believer are washed away in baptism and a fresh start is made obeying the law or commandments of Christ NOT the law of Moses which was fulfilled by Jesus. It was nailed to the cross or stake or wood upon which he died, as the apostle Paul writes to the Colossians 2v14 *“he has taken it out of the way having nailed it to the cross. Jesus said “I am not come to destroy the Law (Moses) but to fulfil it.” “Not one jot or tittle shall pass from the law, until all be fulfilled.”* Matthew 5v17-19.

Questions

- 53 When God placed Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden what special command did He give them?
- a) not to eat of the tree of Life
 - b) not to eat of the tree which produced apples
 - c) not to eat from the tree of the knowledge of Good and Evil
- 54 What did God say would happen if Adam and Eve disobeyed?
- 55 How did sin come into the world?
- 56 Was the serpent in the Garden of Eden
- a) the devil
 - b) an evil fallen angel
 - c) an animal
- 57 Who first sinned – Adam or Eve?
- 58 Do we sin today?
- 59 What does the word 'devil' mean?
- a) a false accuser
 - b) Satan
 - c) Lucifer
- 60 Is the devil a superhuman being?
- 61 Can we be a devil?
- 62 Name someone who was called a devil.
- 63 Do we all possess the power of the devil?
- 64 What does the word Satan mean?
- a) a devil
 - b) adversary/opposer
 - c) an immortal wicked person
- 65 Who was called a Satan by Jesus?.
- 66 Can there be a good adversary/opposer as well as a bad?
- 67 What are devils or demons that were cast out by Christ?
- a) the language in Christ's day for diseases
 - b) evil spirits of the dead
 - c) the devils' agents
- 68 What was God's punishment for Adam and Eve's sin?
- 69 Has this punishment passed to their descendants? Give quotation.
- 70 What happens when we die? Give quotation.
- 71 Does any part of us live on after we are dead?

- 72 What is hell?
- a) the place where the wicked are punished
 - b) the grave
 - c) the place where only wicked people go
- 73 Give the Hebrew and Greek words for hell.
- 74 What is Gehenna?
- 75 What happens at death to the wicked who do not know God?
- 76 What particular curse was placed upon the serpent?
- a) he would be called an evil angel
 - b) he would crawl on his belly all his life
 - c) he would be punished by the devil
- 77 What particular curse was placed upon the woman?
- 78 What particular curse was placed upon the man?
- 79 Why were Adam and Eve driven from the Garden of Eden?
- 80 Adam and Eve knew they were naked - what does nakedness signify?
- a) everlasting life
 - b) immortal nature
 - c) sin
- 81 Why did God not accept Adam and Eve's covering, and why?
- 82 What did God provide as a covering?
- 83 Could the slaying of animals take away sin?
- a) yes
 - b) always
 - c) only as a covering for sin
- 84** What was the purpose of sacrifice under the Law of Moses?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 5

5.0 JESUS (Saviour) - promised in Eden as the perfect sacrifice for sin.

5.1 The Covenant in Eden - *"And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel."* - Genesis 3v15.

GENESIS 3V15

(Study)

The offspring of the serpent = SIN in wicked men. *"You snakes! You brood of vipers!"* - Matthew 23v33.

The offspring of the woman = JESUS — Galatians 4v4 *"But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law"* Jesus had no human father.

"You will strike his heel" = a temporary wound because a wound in the heel is not fatal but only temporary. Christ was only three days in the grave but rose from the dead having conquered sin by perfect obedience to his Father's will. *"... he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities;"* - Isaiah 53v5.

"He will crush your head" = To bruise or crush the head is a fatal wound. This is what Christ did to SIN (represented by the serpent - his heart is in his head). Jesus conquered SIN by perfect obedience to his Heavenly Father, and thus destroyed sin in himself by overcoming the temptations of his human nature, his mortal nature. John 3v14-15 — *"Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert, so the Son of Man must be lifted up, that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life."* We see mortal sin-cursed human nature symbolised by a *"bronze snake"* – Numbers 21v9 - *"lifted up"* on a pole by Moses, so that anyone bitten by a snake could be healed. *"Even so"*, said Jesus, must the *"Son of man be lifted up"* that all looking to him may be healed of a sin-cursed human nature. When Jesus returns, death will not be completely destroyed. Death will only be completely destroyed at the end of the Millennium, the 1000 years reign of Christ, as there will be sin amongst the human population living during this time.

Has the symbol of crushing/bruising in the head been completely fulfilled? No *"Christ, the first-fruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him."* 1Corinthians. 15v23. It will be completely fulfilled at the end of the Millennium when God is *"all in all"*. 1 Corinthians 15v28.

Jesus *"became obedient to death"* - Philippians 2v8. He fulfilled the promise of God in Eden in Genesis 3v15. The woman's seed (Christ, son of a virgin) - *'shall bruise (or crush) your head'* the serpent - which was the symbol of **SIN** - Christ dealt a fatal blow to **SIN** by being perfectly obedient.

Disobedience = death. Obedience = life. Romans 5v19

5.1.1 The seed of the woman - JESUS. Born only of a woman, i.e. not of man. *"Therefore the Lord himself will give you a sign: The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and will call*

him Immanuel.” - Isaiah 7v14. “You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David.” - Luke 1v31-35; Galatians 4v4 “But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law.”

5.1.2 The seed of the serpent - SIN. First introduced into the world by Eve and Adam. 1John 3v4; James 1v14-15. The seed of the serpent (sin) would strike or bruise the offspring or seed of the woman (Christ) in the heel (a temporary wound), fulfilled when Christ died for sin. The bruise in the head (a fatal wound), **partially** fulfilled when Christ rose from the dead - *“the grave could not hold him”* -- and to be completely fulfilled when death is finally destroyed. *“The last enemy to be destroyed is death.”* - 1Corinthians 15v26. See also Revelation 21v4.

5.2 The Birth of Christ

5.2.1 Son of God — *“I have seen and I testify that this is the Son of God.”* - John 1v34. Read also Luke 1v35; *“The angel answered, (Mary) ‘The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.’”* Matthew 3v17; John 10v36; John 3v16; *“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son [by the Holy Spirit on Mary], that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”* See John 5v30, 14v28. We can clearly see that **Jesus is not part of any ‘trinity’**. This doctrine is made up by false teachers. Psalm 118v8-9 *“It is better to take refuge in the LORD than to trust in man. It is better to take refuge in the LORD than to trust in princes.”*

5.2.2. Son of man (through Mary), Luke 1v30-31; Isaiah 7v14; Galatians 4v4 - *“But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law”*. The only man born only of a woman. Mary, a normal member of the human race, was His mother, but God was His Father - Luke 1v34-35. *“The angel answered, (Mary) ‘The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.’”*

THE ONE AND ONLY CHRIST

(Study)

Christ gives first place, honour and worship to God his Father. He teaches that all believers should know who God is and what are the benefits of Christ’s coming into the world - John 17v3.

He testifies that he was sent by his Father into this world so that we might not perish - but that through him we might find salvation, according to the angelic saying: *“you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.”* Matthew 1v21. He has also been anointed, full of the Holy Spirit (God’s Separate Power), that he might be our Mediator, Priest and King. The full weight of the Gospel rests upon our believing that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and faithfully confessing our hope of everlasting life.

Consider two things:

- 1) the kind of expressions used in the Bible concerning the Son of God, are not those used for the Father or the Holy Spirit;
- 2) in what manner Christ was sent, as distinct from that which antichrist introduced into the ‘holy mother church’.

The first expression by which the Son is shown to be different from the Father is

- a) the Father **sent** him, as in Luke 4v18, John 4v34 and John 3v16
- b) He called him **His own**, as in Romans 8v32

- c) He was **conceived** by the Holy Spirit - Luke 1v35; Matthew 1v20.
- d) He was **born of a woman** - Galatians 4v4.
- e) He was **descendant of David** - Romans 1v3.
- f) He was **chosen before creation** - 1Peter 1v20.
- g) He was **Promised** - Genesis 3v15; Romans 1v1-2.
- h) He was **chosen** by God - 1Peter 2v6.
- i) He was **sealed** by the Father - John 6v27.
- j) He was **given** to us by God – John 3v16, Acts 10v38.
- k) He was **raised up** by God from death - Acts 2v24.
- l) He was **glorified** by God - Acts 3v13.
- m) He was **exalted** by God - Acts 2v33.
- n) He was **given life** by God - John 5v26.
- o) God **gave** him **honour and glory** - 1Peter 1v21.
- p) God **gave** him the Holy Spirit (God's Separate Power) - John 3v34.
- q) God **gave** him **power** - Matthew 28v18.
- r) God **gave** him a **name above every name** - Philippians 2v9.
- s) God has **ordained** him to be Judge of the living and dead - Acts 10v42.
- t) God has **made** him the **corner stone** - 1 Peter 2v6.
- u) God has **made** him unto us **wisdom and righteousness** - 1Corinthians 1v30.

None of the above expressions is in any way appropriate to the invisible God, whose Son Jesus is the living, express image of his Father. Because that One God of Israel – the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

- a. was never conceived,
- b. neither born,
- c. nor was ordained of anyone,
- d. chosen of no one,
- e. neither sanctified,
- f. nor anointed,
- g. nor exalted by anyone else,
- h. took nothing of anyone,
- i. He cannot be a mediator,
- j. He has no God,
- k. no one is His head.

Jesus of Nazareth has the keys of death and hell (the grave – Revelation 1v18) because unto him all power in heaven and earth has been given, and a name above every name.

The Bible teaches that Jesus Christ was sent by God to be the first born of a new creation - 1Corinthians 15v20,23, and that he was *created* for that purpose. He was never from everlasting as was his Father - who *“cannot be tempted by evil”* - James 1v13 - unlike the Son who was tempted and overcame his temptations by perfect obedience under extreme trial - Hebrews 5v7-8; Philippians 2v8; Romans 5v19. We have proved from God's Word, the Bible that Jesus was not part of a trinity.

Christ was “beginning of the creation of God” – that is the **new creation** spoken of in 2Peter 3v13 *“But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth...”* - Revelation 3v14. For those who will form part of that new creation Paul writes, 2Corinthians 5v17.. *“Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!”* Furthermore, Jesus never existed before he was born of Mary.

5.2.3 No pre-existence - Jesus did not exist before being born of Mary, 4,000 years after creation - except in the plan and purpose of God. 1Peter 1v20 — *“He was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake”*. Read also: Ephesians 1v4 (God's foreknowledge); Jeremiah 1v5; John 1v1-20; John 8v58 *“I tell you the truth, Jesus*

answered, *'before Abraham was born, I am!'*" - In the plan and purpose of God, Jesus has been made immortal before Abraham, who is in the grave awaiting the resurrection when Jesus returns to this earth. (See 7.8.7.1) Acts 13v33 — *"You are my Son; today I (God) have become your Father."* The first-born of the new creation when Jesus was rewarded with immortality.

GOD'S PLAN AND PURPOSE - JOHN 1v1-3

(Study)

God is an Architect and a Builder; as Hebrews 11v10 states. Psalm 33v6 *"By the word of the LORD were the heavens made, their starry host by the breath of his mouth."* Job 38v4-7 states the following:

- a) He laid the earth's foundation
- b) Marked off it's dimensions
- c) Stretched a measuring line across it Isaiah 40v12 states the following:
- d) Measured the waters in the hollow of his hand
- e) Marked off the heavens
- f) Weighed the mountains in the scale and the hills in a balance

Before God created the heavens and the earth he had a plan and a purpose for it, as Isaiah 45v18 says *"For.. he who created the heavens, he is God; he who fashioned and made the earth, he founded it; he did not create it to be empty, but formed it to be inhabited..."* This is God's Plan and for its purpose (Habakkuk 2v14) states *"for the earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters covers the sea."*

John 1v1-3 states the following: *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made."* v14 — *"the word became flesh and made his dwelling among us."* What is the meaning of the word '**WORD**' in these verses? It does not mean a person (Jesus) because in the Greek it is '**Logos**' — **purpose, plan** of God. Psalm 33v9 *"..For he spoke (a word), and it came to be; he commanded, and it stood firm (or was created)."* Genesis 1v3,6,9,11,14,20,24 and 26 — God used the spoken 'WORD' '**Let there be**' which was with him (Mind) and was God's plan and purpose, and Jesus was the first — the centre of His Plan and Purpose. Thus John the Baptist said in the gospel record of John 1v15 — *"John testifies concerning him (Jesus). He cries out, saying, "This was he (Jesus) of whom I said, 'He who comes after me has surpassed me because he was before me.'" John expressed how Jesus was, because he was the first in the mind of God as a 'word'. Notice that John the Baptist was older than Jesus in physical birth. Study Luke 1v1-2,40. Also study John 8v48-59, where Jesus himself said in v58 *"before Abraham was born, I am."* This does not mean that Jesus existed physically before Abraham or before his birth of Mary, 4,000 years after creation. v56 states the point *"Your father Abraham rejoiced at the thought (in his mind) of seeing my day; he saw it and was glad."**

So before God created us (mankind) Genesis 1v26, He had first in His mind, Jesus, but He did not create him at that time. Galatians 4v4 says *"But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman (Mary), born under law."* In the beginning God used His Word to create everything, also it was by the Word that Jesus was made, by the spoken word which the Lord sent to Mary through his angel Gabriel. Mary responded to the angel in Luke 1v38 *"May it be to me as you have said."* Mary was at this time a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph a descendant of David and she became pregnant after the 'spoken word' was delivered to her through the Holy Spirit which overshadowed her with power of the Most High God. Now the '**WORD**' became flesh — John 1v14.

Example: Suppose you have it in your mind that you wanted to build a house. This is your purpose and you work out your plan. Now on your plan you have all the rooms with doors, but when the house is built, one room is without a door. When someone comes and asks you about it you will tell him that this room has a door (meaning on your plan), not that the door was there and then removed.

When the right time comes for you to fix the door, your plan would be complete.

Jesus did not physically appear as a gate. John 10v9 — *“I am the gate; whoever enters through me will be saved. He will come in and go out, and find pasture.”* The prophet Isaiah prophesied about him to be born by a virgin (Isaiah 7v14). This appeared on the plan (in God’s mind) and physically on earth (word became flesh) when he was born of Mary 4,000 years later.

Jesus did not have a pre-existence before his birth, only in the mind, plan and purpose of God.

5.2.4 Jesus is not equal with God. John 5v30: *“By myself I can do nothing...”* John 14v28: *“You heard me say, ‘I am going away and I am coming back to you.’ If you loved me, you would be glad that I am going to the Father, **for the Father is greater than I.**”* Read also John 10v30 with 17v11.

5.2.5 His nature – human/mortal. Hebrews 2v14-18 — *“Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death - that is, the devil - and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death. For surely it is not angels he helps, but Abraham’s descendants. For this reason he had to be **made like his brothers in every way**, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people. Because he himself suffered when he was tempted, he is able to help those who are being tempted.”*

THE NATURE OF CHRIST

(Study)

This subject is a **first principle one**; it concerns matters on which we all should know before being baptised. The first point to draw attention to is the constant emphasis which the Scriptures place upon Christ’s descent from Adam. The Scriptures emphasise again and again that he was of Adam’s human nature. In Eden it was foretold that the saviour was to be *“the offspring or seed of the woman”*, Abraham was told that *“through your offspring (that is, his natural human descendant) all nations on earth will be blessed..”* David was told that, *“he (God) would place one of his descendants on his throne...”* The New Testament opens with the words, *“The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham...”* Romans 1v2-3 speaks of the *“... Holy Scriptures regarding his Son, who as to his human nature was a descendant of David..”* In Galatians 4v4 Paul says, *“God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law.”*

These and many other passages teach very clearly not only that Jesus was a member of Adam’s human nature, but that the fact was fundamental to his mission as the Saviour. His body, or his flesh, and his life were inseparable; so that if he possessed the same kind and quality of flesh as Adam, then he must have possessed the same kind of life. There were some in the first century who did not believe this and were strongly condemned by John in his Epistles.

The teaching of the Scriptures on this point is quite plain and very emphatic. The passages are well known, but let us look at them. First Hebrews 2v9-14 *“But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, now crowned with glory and honour because he suffered death, so that by the grace of God he might taste death for everyone. In bringing many sons to glory, it was fitting that God, for whom and through whom everything exists, should make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering. Both the one who makes men holy and those who are made holy are of the same family. So Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers. He says, “I will declare your name to my brothers; in the presence of the congregation I will sing your praises.” And again, “I will put my trust in him.” And again he says, “Here am I, and the children God has given me.” Since the children have flesh and*

blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death - that is, the devil...

In Hebrews 9v26 shows how Jesus took away sin, the consequence of which is death, through the sacrifice of himself. *"Then Christ would have had to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself.."* And so *"in bringing many sons to glory."* - Hebrews 2v10. We note the repeated emphasis which the apostle lays upon Christ's relationship to his brethren.

Now turn to v16-18 of this same chapter 2 *"For surely it is not angels he helps, but Abraham's descendants. For this reason he had to be made like his brothers in every way, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people. Because **he himself suffered when he was tempted, he is able to help those who are being tempted.**"*

It was because Jesus possessed the same nature as ourselves - a nature subject to the desires and promptings of the flesh - that his victory over those temptations was able to achieve our salvation. All the passages above teach that the acceptability of Christ's sacrifice lay in the fact that it was the offering of a human body, in which all the frailties and temptations of the flesh had been overcome by complete submission to the will of God.

Paul wrote in Romans 8v3, *"For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man..."* Read also: Galatians 4v4; Romans 1v3.

5.2.6 His character - sinless. He was tempted like we are but he did not sin. Hebrews 4v15: *"For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are - yet was without sin."* See Hebrews 5v8; 1 Peter 2v22.

THE FIGHT JESUS HAD WITH THE DEVIL

(Study)

Jesus was born with our human nature from his mother, Mary, who was a descendant of Adam and Eve. Jesus had ordinary human flesh and blood just like us, and like us was tempted. - Hebrews 4 v 15 *"For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are--yet was without sin."*

Jesus had a mind disciplined by his Father's commandments.

The apostle Paul explains this for us in Romans chapter 7 v 22-23 *"For in my inner being I delight in God's law; but I see another law at work in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin at work within my members."*

Every son or daughter of God (a believer) once they try to do the commandments of God will experience the fight against his own mind (his own will) which is contrary to the way which God wants him to go. Natural man is unable to keep the laws of God (the commandments) perfectly because of his human nature.

Jesus Christ never failed – never sinned – and always understood the right way to go, the right words to speak and the right thoughts to think - because he was obedient to God, his Father. *"The Word became flesh (human)"*. Being God's Word, he thought GOD'S THOUGHTS and knew how to overcome the mind of the flesh, the evil mind, the devil or false accuser. *"The Spirit gives life; the flesh counts for nothing. The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life."* John 6v63.

He has shown us the way to life — the crucifixion of the human mind. *“I am the way”* he said. So we are told, to offer our bodies as *“living sacrifices”* holy and pleasing to God – this is the spiritual act of worship. — Romans 12v1. *“Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God--this is your spiritual act of worship.”* *“For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin.”* - Romans 6v6.

The Greek word *“diabolos”* from which comes the word devil, just means *‘false accuser’*, and it is applied to the serpent because it falsely accused God — called Him a liar. It said *“You will not surely die.”* Eve listened to this false statement of the serpent, together with her husband, Adam, and so disobeyed God. Romans 8v6 says, *“The mind of sinful man is death.”* *“Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned.”* Romans 5v12. All men become a *‘devil’* because they all inherit the sinful human nature of Adam and Eve. James tells us plainly what happens when we give way to evil thoughts. *“But each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed.”* James 1v14.

Jesus shows that it is the heart of man that is wicked - Matthew 15v19 *“For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, false testimony, slander.”*

5.2.7 The names of Christ:-

Jesus = Saviour - Matthew 1v21

Christ = Anointed - Acts 10v38

Messiah = Anointed - Daniel 9v25-26

Emmanuel - God with Us - Isaiah 7v14; Matthew 1v23

5.3 The work of Christ:-

Teaching and preaching the Gospel - Mark 1v14-15;
Matthew 9v35

Healing - Matthew 4v23; Luke 6v1 7-19

Personal Sacrifice - Hebrews 7v26-27; 9v7; 9v12;
Titus 2v14

MIRACLE BY CHRIST

(Study)

Jesus did not believe that at death part of man goes to heaven and enjoys the promised reward. He taught the bodily resurrection from the dead at his return to the earth - John 6v39;40;44-45. He demonstrated it by raising Lazarus from the dead ***bodily*** after he had been in the grave and had started decomposing - John 11. Jesus the RESURRECTION AND THE LIFE, showed his power by the miracle of raising the dead. He did not tell them they would go to heaven at death. Lazarus did not say he saw anything when he was dead because he ceased to exist in the grave. When Christ returns he will not call anyone from heaven but *“for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out--those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.”* - John 5v28-29.

5.4 The death of Christ -

FIRST for Himself because He was of human nature. See Hebrews 2v14 *“Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death--that is, the devil.”* compare 9v25-28; *“Nor did he enter heaven to offer himself again and again, the way the high priest enters the Most Holy Place every year with blood that is not his own. Then Christ would have had to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once for all at the end of the ages*

to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself. Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment, so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people;” 2v17; 10v11-14.

SECOND, because He had committed no sin, He became the perfect sacrifice through whom others could have their sins forgiven. Read references above, also Romans 6v23; 5v12,19.

In the death of Christ the love of God is shown in that He was prepared to let His own Son die to redeem man from his sin. John 3v16, read this, and also the following: Romans 5v8; 2Corinthians 5v15; Revelation 5v9; 1Corinthians 15v3; Hebrews 9v26.

JESUS CHRIST – HE REPRESENTED US, HE DID NOT DIE INSTEAD OF US

(Study)

If Jesus died instead of us - then we should not have to die, but we do die.

Jesus died as a representative of us, and that is why he came in human nature which is subject to sin – Romans 8v3. Having God, the Creator of heaven and earth as his Father, gave him the strength to overcome the temptations of his human nature which he inherited from his mother Mary who was a descendant of Adam and had the sin cursed human nature.

Consider these words in Isaiah 53v11 ***“By His knowledge My righteous Servant shall justify many..”*** And John 6v63 - ***“The words I have spoken to you are spirit, and they are life.”*** He overcame the weakness of his human nature and therefore had a sinless character. Other men and women being born of human parents are weakened by sin. Even the apostle Paul says in Romans 7v24; that he had problems in doing that which is good. Jesus Christ was ***“raised up”*** or ***“made strong”*** by God, see Psalm 80v17; Psalm 86v16; Luke 1v38.

The first man (Adam) was disobedient and brought death into the world through sin. The second man (Jesus) as a Saviour of man by Representing him brought life through obedience, Romans 5v19, - even ***“to death”***- Philippians 2v8. ***“And being found in appearance as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient to death-- even death on a cross!”***

SYMBOL is used a lot in God’s Word. Jesus, in Hebrews 2v14 is said to have destroyed the devil by his death. ***“Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death--that is, the devil.”*** How did Jesus do that? The original language of the New Testament was Greek, and the word ‘devil’ is taken from the original Greek, ‘diabolos,’ which when translated means ‘false accuser’ and ‘slanderer’ - so that anyone that falsely accuses or slanders a person is a devil. In John 6v70 Jesus called Judas a devil. Yet John 13v2 says ***“the devil..”*** put the idea or thought into his mind. It was something which was prompting Judas to do evil. Now we are told in John 12v6 that Judas loved money - he was a thief. That was his weakness - the love of money. This was the devil that was enticing Judas to do this vile act. To betray his master for a bit more money.

James 1v14-15 says ***“..each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death.”*** Or to put it in other words SIN IN MAN and it was this very thing that Jesus condemned and crucified. Look up in your Bible Romans 8v3. Jesus was tempted by the same devil (*sin in man*) that tempted Judas. Jesus was a man, he possessed our human nature. He had the same flesh and blood as we each possess - Hebrews 2v14. It was the very reason he came in mortal nature to conquer this power which ***“tempts every man”***.

Jesus overcame sin. He did his Father’s will - not his own. He died for himself first, then for the people - Hebrews 7v27 ***“Unlike the other high priests, he does not need to offer sacrifices day after day first for his own sins, and then for the sins of the people. He sacrificed for their sins once for all when he offered himself.”*** Hebrews 9v12 ***“He did not enter by means of the blood of goats and***

calves; but he entered the Most Holy Place once for all by his own blood, having obtained eternal redemption."

As Jesus did not die instead of us, what can we do to be saved? Read Mark 16v15-16 - "*He said to them, 'Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.'*" Believes the Good News? What is the Good News (Gospel)? The *Good News* is the Kingdom of God to be established on this earth when Jesus returns. Remember what Jesus said "*You are my friends if you do what I command.*" So we have to **believe the True Gospel, after the knowledge obtained from God's Word, be baptised** and do what Jesus **commands**, to be **saved**.

LUKE 23v43 – JESUS AND THE THIEF WHILE ON THE CROSS

(Study)

LUKE 23v43 "*Jesus answered him, "I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise."*

This passage mentions neither souls nor heaven.

The thief did not request a place in heaven. "*he said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom."* (vs. 42). The same hope was expressed by the Apostle Paul. (2Timothy 4v18). The thief was not thinking of "going to be with the Lord", he was requesting a place in the coming of a future event.

Jesus answered him: You ask me to remember you then, but I say to you now:

Jesus answered him, "*I tell you the truth today, you will be with me in paradise.*" (Luke 23v42-43). This repunctuation is not tinkering with the text. The Greek word "semeron" translated "today", "this day" is used as a term of emphasis. In the following references "semeron" qualifies the preceding verb: Luke 2v11; 22v34; Acts 20v26; 26v29; 2Corinthians 3v14-15. Rotherharn in his translation places the comma after "this day,". There are a large number of passages in the Septuagint translation in which the Greek construction corresponds to that of Luke 23v43: "I say unto you this day" corresponds to the emphatic, "I testify unto you this day", e.g. Deuteronomy 6v6; 7v11; 8v1; 10v13; 11v8,13,28.

By assuming that by "today" Jesus meant the thief would go to paradise the day he died, but where did the thief go that very day? (The thief was promised a place with Jesus). By establishing where Jesus went the day he died, it follows that the thief went to the same place. This could not be heaven as Jesus was put in the tomb for three days.

As Jesus was in the Tomb how could the Son of man be both in heaven and in the earth at the *same* time?

Jesus, *after* his resurrection, said to Mary Magdalene, "*Do not hold on to me, for I have not yet returned to the Father.*" (John 20v17).

Since Jesus lay dead in the grave on the day of his crucifixion, this passage offers no proof for the immortality of the soul, nor for the belief that the thief went that day to heaven. The thief was with the Lord in the grave. By implication, if the expression, "I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise." be read as meaning the thief went with Jesus to the grave, then the grave must be paradise.

Jesus really did answer the thief's request to be remembered in his kingdom. Paradise in Scripture is always associated with a place on earth, never in heaven. Consider the following:

Those who overcome will "*eat from the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God.*" (Rev. 2v7). The allusion to the Garden of Eden is unmistakable. The Garden of Eden (paradise) is often used to

describe the paradise-like condition of the earth in the kingdom of God. (See; Isaiah 51v3; Ezekiel 36v35).

'Paradise' is transferred from the word "paradeisos" which Bullinger, the writer says was used by the Greeks "to describe a large pleasure-garden with trees, or park of an Eastern monarch." The word itself, therefore, is descriptive of an idyllic place on earth, not in heaven.'

Jesus taught that eternal life is preceded by the resurrection and judgment at the *last* day.

"For the Son of Man is going to come in his Father's glory with his angels, and then he will reward each person according to what he has done." (Matt. 16v27).

Those that have done good will '*rise to live*' (John 5v29). They are raised up at the "*last day*". (John 6v39) and will have "eternal life (John. 6v39-40, 44, 54).

The righteous go "*to eternal life*" after the judgment. (Matt. 25v31-46). The thief will receive his reward, at the last day, when Christ comes in his kingdom.

LAW OF MOSES AND LAW OF CHRIST (Study)

The law of Moses was given by God through his servant Moses to control the lives of the Israelites when they left captivity in Egypt to the time of the crucifixion of Jesus Christ their Saviour and Messiah. This was a period of some 1530 years from about BC 1500 to AD 30. During that period of time Israel had to follow the strict requirements of the law in all its detail to be acceptable to God their Father. Sacrifices were required both to thank God for his goodness and to obtain forgiveness or atonement where the law had been disobeyed or broken. However, that law could not bring eternal life, it could only bring forgiveness to the offerer of the sacrifice correctly selected and prepared.

With the birth of Jesus Christ as the Lamb of God to *take away sins*, we have the perfect sacrifice for sins offered once for all who are willing to believe in him and the true Gospel of the Kingdom that he preached. The past sins of the believer are washed away in baptism and a fresh start is made obeying the law or commandments of Christ NOT the law of Moses which was fulfilled by Jesus when it was nailed to the cross or stake or wood upon which he died, as the apostle Paul writes to the Colossians 2v14 "*he took it away, nailing it to the cross.*" Jesus said "*Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfil them. I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.*" Matthew 5v17-18.

Throughout the life of Jesus, to the moment of his death, he kept the Law of Moses, otherwise he could not have been acceptable to his Father (God). As an obedient servant and a perfect sacrifice without spot or blemish, he was the only man that has kept the Law of Moses to perfection. He could say – "*Can any of you prove me guilty of sin?*" (John 8v46). Therefore his preaching to the Israelites was while the Law of Moses was still to be kept, daily sacrifice for sins was necessary until that moment Jesus died on the cross when he said "*It is finished.*" Yes, Jesus had accomplished God's purpose in living a life of perfect obedience and opened up the way of eternal life for those who desired to serve God. In addition God added this further evidence that the way of approach was opened to Him through his son's sacrifice in that he caused the veil of the Temple (the curtain which separated the Holy Place from the Most Holy) to be torn from the top to the bottom. This was designed to show that those desiring to pass from mortality to immortality could achieve this through Jesus Christ, not through the Law of Moses and the priestly duties of the tabernacle and Temple.

Jesus Christ is now the High Priest through whom the true baptised believer can pray to God for the forgiveness of sins. Jesus has left us commandments and laws to keep. We refer to them as the "commandments of God and Christ", many of which include aspects of the Ten Commandments such

as loving the Lord our God who is the only God, loving our neighbours as ourselves and not killing people.

The fact remains that the Law of Moses pointed forward to Jesus Christ who fulfilled it to the letter. Salvation is through him not through the ordinances of the Law of Moses. All these quotations from the Old Testament, the Psalms and the Prophets and from the four Gospel Records are from men who, although inspired by the Holy Spirit to write the Divine Truth, were themselves living under and writing to men and women controlled by the Law of Moses.

It is when we come to the writings of Jesus Christ's apostles - Luke, Paul, James, Peter, John, Jude and the last message, the book of Revelation (or the Apocalypse or appearing of Jesus Christ) that we see the plan of God. **The wonderful way in which the New Covenant, established before the Old Covenant - (the Law of Moses),** in the promises of God made in Eden - Genesis 3v15, to Noah - Genesis 8 and 9, to Abraham - Genesis 12, 13 and 15 to Jacob - Genesis 28v13-15, come together in the life, death, resurrection, immortality and return to the earth of Jesus Christ to reign as King for 1,000 years, the Sabbath of rest referred to by the Hebrews 4v9-11. **This is why the New Covenant, the Law of Christ is so much better than the Old Covenant, the Law of Moses. Because it relates us to a time when sin will be removed forever, not just forgiven.**

Having seen from the Bible that the Law of Moses was fulfilled in the death of Jesus Christ, we need to look at these points concerning the Ten Commandments in Exodus 20 and the following laws in chapters 21-22. When we read the words of Jesus in Matthew 5v17-19 we must not forget to look at the parallel record in Luke 6v20-43 where in verse 29 for example Jesus tells us to accept injustice for *"If someone strikes you on one cheek, turn to him the other also."* Contrast this with the commandments given through Moses, where Exodus 21v24 states that we should be recompensed with an *"eye for eye, tooth for tooth"*. So in fulfilling the law Jesus modified much of it for use in his commandments to his followers. The apostle Paul when writing to the believers at Rome showed that the Law of Moses provided no advantage because it was unable to save people from their sins. Reading from Romans 7v6 *"But now, by dying to what once bound us (to sin - through baptism into Christ - see chapter 6), we have been released from the law so that we serve in the new way of the Spirit, and not in the old way of the written code."* He goes on in the next chapters 8-11 to show how Israel rejected Jesus Christ but how much they need the Gospel, which is far superior to the Law of Moses, for their salvation.

In Romans 2, Paul, who was a Jew, schooled in all features of the Law of Moses, shows how even circumcision is of no benefit 2v29 *"a man is a Jew if he is one inwardly; and circumcision is circumcision of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the written code. Such a man's praise is not from men, but from God."*

In Romans 3 he shows how that **righteousness is through faith** in God, His Word and His promises, NOT in keeping the Law of Moses, but the Law of Faith. In the next chapter - chapter 4 he shows that Abraham was **justified by faith** before circumcision or the Law of Moses were introduced. The promise to Abraham in Genesis 12, 13 and 15 was that ALL nations NOT just the nation of Israel would be blessed and inherit the earth, provided they show the same obedience and faith of Abraham.

The Sabbath day was the seventh day, a day of rest. A day for Israel to rest from six days work and to remember God and His Goodness. It was the seventh day of rest for God after the creation week. In God's plan of six thousand years for man's rule on the earth, the seventh period of a thousand years or the millennium will be the establishment of the Kingdom of God on the earth. This period will form the Sabbath of rest spoken of in Hebrews 4v9-11 in which the whole world will be at peace resting after the judgments have been carried out by God upon the wicked world in which we now live.

In Mark chapter 2v27 *"The Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath"*, which shows it came after the sixth day on which man was created and will be that period of rest for man in God's

Kingdom on the earth. The rest of the chapter shows that Jesus was accused by the leaders of Israel of breaking the Law of Moses by allowing his disciples to pluck corn and eat it on the Sabbath day (2v23). He then tells them about what David did, God's anointed King, when he was so hungry (2v25-26) "*eat the consecrated bread*". Jesus then said "*The Son of Man is also Lord even of the Sabbath*" - Luke 6v1-5 confirms this incident. Another time he went back into the synagogue, where the Jews worshipped, and healed a man who had a shrivelled up hand so that it was made like the good hand. He was showing that his mission and backing was greater than the Law of Moses and he had the authority of God to teach and do these things. He was showing to all who would follow him that now is the time to do good works for God His Father in helping and healing, offering the way to salvation through him and not through the offerings and observance of the Law of Moses - read Matthew 28v16-20 and Luke 24v27,44-47.

- 1 The Jewish Sabbath was not on a Sunday - which is the first day of the week. The Sabbath was on Saturday - the seventh day of the week. The Jews keep this to the present day.
- 2 The Bible uses the terms 'Law of Moses' and 'Law of God' interchangeably - see 2Chronicles 31v3. How then is it possible to exclude the Ten commandments from the covenant that the Apostle taught had become obsolete? He describes them as "*the stone tablets of the covenant*" - Hebrews 9v4; and he refers to that covenant as "*the ministry that brought death...*" - 2Corinthians 3v7
- 3 The Ten commandments formed part of the Covenant which became obsolete in Christ - otherwise they would not be identified with "*the ministry that brought death...*"
- 4 As individual obligations, nine of the commandments are still binding - because they have been re-affirmed by Christ. Not so the fourth commandment. Christ was criticised for working on the Sabbath day - John 7v22-23.
- 5 In Christ there is provision for the forgiveness of sins. The 'Law of Christ' re-affirms nine of those commands, and provides a new meaning to the fourth, the Sabbath law. In contrast to the "*ministry that brought death*" it becomes "*the perfect law that gives freedom*" because it frees or liberates the believer from the bondage of sin; through the forgiveness of sins and offers the hope of life which the Old covenant could not provide. James 1v25; 2v8-12.
- 6 The law of physical circumcision was given by God to Abraham but was superseded in Christ.
- 7 "*Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.*" Romans 10v4
- 8 Moses - "*who would put a veil over his face to keep the Israelites from gazing at it while the radiance was fading away.*" This was the Law of Moses - 2Corinthians 3v13. See v7 - the ministration of death written and which was engraved in letters on stone - "*came with glory... fading though it was*" v 9 for the "*the ministry that condemns men*" is exceeded in glory by Christ's law - which is called in this verse "*the ministry that brings righteousness!*"
- 9 The fourth commandment, relating to the seventh day of rest, was never re-affirmed by Christ or the apostles. There is not a single command in the New Testament requiring believers to observe the seventh day as a Sabbath, but there is much to the contrary.
- 10 After the resurrection of Christ, when the nation of Israel was overthrown and the Gospel was preached to the Gentiles, the formal observance of the Sabbath ceased.
- 11 Christ invites us to the true Sabbath rest, not one day in seven, but upon every day, in the invitation - "*Come unto me and I will give you rest*"

- 12 Christ did many of his miracles on the Sabbath, showing the meaningless empty formalism of the Jewish leaders with its insistence upon the seventh day rest without an appreciation of its Spiritual significance. He did this upon the principal that he was – “the *Lord of the Sabbath*.” - Matt 12v8; and showed that it was lawful to do good on the Sabbath – see Isaiah 58v13-14
- 13 The Apostle Paul taught – “*we have been released from the law so that we serve in the new way of the Spirit, and not in the old way of the written code.*” Romans 7v6. “*Therefore no-one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin.*” Romans 3v20. Verse 31 “*Do we, then, nullify the law by this faith? Not at all! Rather, we uphold the law*” through Christ who has brought out the Spirit of the law and forgiveness to all those that believe (or have faith in) his sacrifice for sin. Our **faith** is credited to us for **righteousness** IF WE BELIEVE on Him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead - Romans 4v3 and 24. In other words, God forgives us our sins and clothes us with righteousness, because of our belief, baptism and obedience in His promises in Christ Jesus.
- 14 Now that Jesus is Lord of the Sabbath - Matthew 12v8. Paul then writes, “*Therefore do not let anyone judge you... with regard to a... Sabbath day. These are a shadow of the things that were to come; the reality, however, is found in Christ.*” Colossians 2v16-17.
- 15 The Sabbath - as all the things in the law of Moses - pointed forward to Christ. Six thousand years (weekdays) of labour. The thousand years of Rest (Sabbath) in which Christ is the Lord sitting on the throne of his father David, controlling the nations. Psalm 2v9 “*You will rule them with an iron sceptre.*” v 12 “*Kiss the Son, lest he be angry and you be destroyed in your way, for his wrath can flare up in a moment.*” Note how this verse concludes, “*Blessed are all who take refuge in him.*”
- 16 The apostle wrote, “*There remains, then, a Sabbath-rest for the people of God*”, for the true believers - Hebrews 4v9. The Sabbath today is binding on believers in the same sense that the law of circumcision is. The apostle gave both a Spiritual import. For Paul wrote of circumcision as “*...nor is circumcision merely outward and physical. No, a man is one inwardly; and circumcision is circumcision of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the written code. Such a man's praise is not from men, but from God.*” - Romans 2v28-29. “*In him (Christ) you were also circumcised, in the putting off of the sinful nature, not with a circumcision done by the hands of men but with the circumcision done by Christ, (which was the crucifixion) having been buried with him in baptism and raised with him through your faith in the power of God*” - Colossians 2v11-12.

So the physical keeping of the Sabbath and physical circumcision is not imposed upon believers as it was upon the Jews, because the law of Moses was abolished as Hebrews 8v13 shows “*By calling this covenant "new," he has made the first one (the Law) obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear.*”

The New Covenant is the Abrahamic covenant - Galatians 3v27 – “*for all of you who were baptised into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.*” v29 “*If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*”

5.5

Tithing (Study)

The word 'tithe' in both Hebrew and Greek, has reference to the tenth part, which, it is suggested, we are called upon to give of our substance in the service of God. This does not mean placing one tenth of wages or salary in the collection bag, but rather that in one way or another we give willingly, freely, voluntarily, not by compulsion or legislation, one tenth of our substance to God, either literally or in the spirit of giving. It is indicated, in any case, we believe, that if need be we give EVERYTHING to the Lord - and the incident of the widow - Luke 21v3 - goes far beyond the tithe, for she gave not ten per cent, but one hundred per cent. The first reference to the giving of a tenth to the Lord is in the case of Abram returning from the slaughter of the northern invaders - Genesis 14v20. Abram gave

Melchizedec, the "priest of the most high God" a tenth of the spoils of war. The comment on this incident in Hebrews 7v4-10, represents this as giving a tenth of the spoil to God in recognition of His goodness and mercy for protection and salvation. There is no suggestion anywhere that the giving of a tenth was in compliance with law: it was a voluntary offering. We would mention also that the spoil of Jericho was devoted to Yahweh, His firstfruits because the victory was His - Joshua 6v17-18 - indicative of the fact that the ideal is that we should be totally devoted to God. The tithe representing the need for total dedication - as was the widow's mite.

In Genesis 28v22 we see that Jacob's intention to give a tenth of his goods in service to God was a voluntary freewill offering, and **not the fulfilment of a command**. It is true that the patriarchs fulfilled in their lives, principles which were later on incorporated into the law of Moses. For example, the Sabbath was observed before the law, voluntarily, in recognition that the rest of God on the seventh day foreshadowed the Millennial rest in the seventh thousandth year from creation. The principle of tithing was also understood before it became a law for Israel. Those who emphasise the need for tithing today reason from its imposition upon Israel. It was part of the commandments given to that nation. We accept that the PRINCIPLES contained in the LAW remain applicable to us, although Christ "*cancelled the written code*" by "*nailing it to the cross*". The principles of sacrifice and atonement, the need for complete dedication, of separation from sin, rejection of the flesh and its sinful words, of judgment and mercy - all these form an essential part of our service today. However, we are not in the peculiar situation of Israel, with animal sacrifices, a Divinely appointed priesthood, etc. The Law of Moses was a shadow of that to come in the atoning work of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is clearly shown in the Epistle to the Hebrews and elsewhere that the work of Christ two thousand years ago was the fulfilment of that foreshadowed in the law of Moses, **and that with the manifestation of the substance we are not called upon to observe the ceremonial ritual of the law, of which tithing was a part.**

Indeed, to impose these things upon believers today is to create a law of works destructive of faith in Christ and cause a Pharisaic self righteousness which is so clearly **condemned** in the apostolic writings.

Questions

- 85 What special promise did God give in the Garden of Eden?
- 86 What do we call this promise?
- 87 Who is the seed of the woman?
- 88 What is the seed of the serpent?
- 89 What was indicated by a “strike his heel” and how was this fulfilled? Why was the term “heel” used?
- 90 What was indicated by “crush your head” and why was the term “head” used?
- 91 Has the symbol of crushing the head been completely fulfilled?
- 92 Who is Christ’s Father?
- a) God
 - b) Joseph
 - c) Holy Spirit
- 93 Who was Christ’s mother?
- 94 Did Christ exist as a person before His birth?
- a) Jesus was at the creation
 - b) Jesus existed before his birth
 - c) Jesus was only in the mind and purpose of God at creation
- 95 Is Christ equal with God and part of the trinity?
- 96 What was Christ’s nature?
- a) mortal/human nature
 - b) immortal/everlasting nature
 - c) Spirit nature
- 97 What was Christ’s character and could he have sinned?
- 98 Was Christ subject to the same temptations as we are? - Quote.
- 99 What do the names “Jesus” and “Christ” mean?
- 100 What was the work of Christ?
- 101 Why did Christ die?
- a) because God wanted him to
 - b) because he had our nature
 - c) because he was the Son of God
- 102 Did Christ have to die for His own salvation?
- 103 How can we benefit from Christ’s death and resurrection?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 6

- 6.0 **Christ's Resurrection**. Because Christ did not sin, the grave could not hold Him. Acts 2v24: *"But God raised him from the dead, freeing him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for death to keep its hold on him."* Also read: Romans 6v9-10; 1Corinthians 15v20-21 and 45-58. Christ came out of the grave in the same human nature as He entered and was given immortality before ascending to God his Father. John 20v27,29; Luke 24v39-43. After Christ's resurrection it was not possible for him to die again. Hebrews 8v14-16; Revelation 1v18; Hebrews 10v10.
- 6.1 Christ was rewarded with Immortal nature soon after His resurrection and finally, forty days later, ascended into heaven. During these forty days He was seen by many witnesses: John 20v17; *"....They were looking intently up into the sky as he was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. "Men of Galilee," they said, "why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven."* Acts 1v6-11; *" and that he appeared to Peter, and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of the brothers at the same time, most of whom are still living, though some have fallen asleep."* 1Corinthians 15v4-8.
- 6.2 Christ is the firstfruits of a new creation of immortal men and women who will serve God perfectly. *"But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: Christ, the firstfruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him."* 1Corinthians 15v20-23.
- 6.3 Christ is now our High Priest and Mediator who presents our prayers acceptably to God and who, having been tried and tempted as we are, can mediate on our behalf. *"Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess. For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are--yet was without sin."* Hebrews 4v14-15; *"For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."* 1Timothy 2v5.
- 6.4 Christ's return to the earth has been promised. Read Acts 1v6 - 11; *"so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him."* Hebrews 9v28; *"...to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead--Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath."* 1Thessalonians 1v10; *"For what is our hope, our joy, or the crown in which we will glory in the presence of our Lord Jesus when he comes? Is it not you? Indeed, you are our glory and joy."* 2v19-20; *"May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."* 5v23;. Matthew 25v31. 2Timothy 4v1

MY Father's House

(Study)

John 14v1-3 which says: *"In my Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am."*

It is commonly assumed that the Father's house is heaven where Jesus now is at the right hand of God. It is true that Heaven is God's dwelling place, as many Scriptures can illustrate, e.g.

Jesus- "Our Father in heaven" – Matthew 6v9-10

Nowhere does the Bible say that heaven is God's house. In the Old Testament days of the Nation of Israel, God was, by His Spirit, present in the Tabernacle on the Mercy Seat between the cherubim and He also dwelt, by His Spirit in the Temple of Solomon. In the New Testament Jesus worshipped in the Temple which he referred to as His Father's house. *"Then he entered the temple area and began driving out those who were selling. "It is written," he said to them, "My house will be a house of prayer"; but you have made it a den of robbers."* – Luke 19v45-46.

These temples or dwelling places of stone prefigure a spiritual house, in which God said He would dwell, by His Eternal Spirit, not in any temporary sense but for ever. *"The God who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth and does not live in temples built by hands."* Acts 17v24.

As Paul has told us, God does not live in houses made by man. As the prophet says - this is quoted from Isaiah 66v1-2 *"This is what the LORD says: "Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool. Where is the house you will build for me? Where will my resting place be? Has not my hand made all these things, and so they came into being?" declares the LORD. "This is the one I esteem: he who is humble and contrite in spirit, and trembles at my word."*

God dwells among those men and women who are receptive to God's way and obey His word. Obviously God does not dwell today in any literal temple, for Jesus said in Luke 21v6 *"As for what you see here, the time will come when not one stone will be left on another; every one of them will be thrown down."* Although there is not a literal temple, God has a house or a dwelling place among His sons and daughters - those who worship Him in spirit and in truth. The believers then are referred to as a spiritual house with Christ as the eldest son. *"But Christ is faithful as a son over God's house. And we are his house, if we hold on to our courage and the hope of which we boast."* (Hebrews 3v6)

Peter also refers to the believers in 1 Peter 2v5 *"You also, like living stones, are being built into a spiritual house to be a holy priesthood, offering spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ."* Paul writes, *"Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and aliens, but fellow-citizens with God's people and members of God's household, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the chief cornerstone. In him the whole building is joined together and rises to become a holy temple in the Lord. And in him you too are being built together to become a dwelling in which God lives by his Spirit. (Ephesians 2v19-11)"* and *"Don't you know that you yourselves are God's temple and that God's Spirit lives in you?"* – (1 Corinthians 3v16)

This is the Father's house of our opening quotation, in which there are many 'rooms' or 'dwelling places'. Jesus will come again and remain with us. This will be the coming of Jesus from heaven to fill the earth with the blessing of God, and to sweeten human life in all its relationships. Those who now serve Him acceptably will be rewarded when he comes, as we read, *"Behold, I am coming soon! My reward is with me, and I will give to everyone according to what he has done."* (Revelation 22v12). That reward will be to live and reign with Christ for 1,000 years, to the well-being and blessing of all human kind. *"You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth."* – (Revelation 20v6).

GUIDELINES FOR PRAYER

“...God is in heaven and you are on earth, so let your words be few” – Ecclesiastes 5v2

We should pray at least in the morning and at night and give thanks to God before our meals, as Jesus did. To these prayers we can add our prayers for our family and our brethren and sisters – those who are sick, in trial, who are losing their faith, who are in isolation, who are aged, and those in any other need.

We can also pray for God’s help and protection throughout the day. We can thank God for His Word, the Bible, and ask for God to bless us as we read, so that we can understand and remember what we have read and try to follow Jesus’ commands. Some people like to do this before they start their daily readings.

John tells us that what we ask for must be according to God’s will (1 John 5v14). It is no good, for example, praying for God to bless us if, when we read His Word we skip through it without thinking about what we are reading. Similarly when praying for God’s protection we should not deliberately take unnecessary risks. We should include *‘if it is the Lord’s will’* at the end of our requests. James 4v15, and God Willing.

Solomon- *“Hear from heaven, your dwelling-place,”* – 1 Kings 8v30

But it was Solomon who built the house for God to dwell in according to God’s instructions.

David- *“the LORD is on his heavenly throne”* – Psalm 11v4

“The highest heavens belong to the LORD, but the earth he has given to man.” - Psalm 115v16

PRIVATE PRAYER

Jesus was asked by his disciples to teach them to pray and he gave them a model prayer. This does not mean we have to use the same words, but it shows us how we ought to pray and what we should pray for.

- 1 *‘Our Father in heaven’* – only those who believe the gospel and are baptised into Jesus can call God their *‘Father’*. It is a great honour to be called sons and daughters of God.
- 2 *‘Hallowed be your Name’*. *‘Hallow’* is a word similar in meaning to *‘holy’* and we know our Heavenly Father is called *‘Holy’* many times in the Bible. It means – to reverence, honour as sacred (or set apart). Our Heavenly Father is the great Creator of the universe so we must be very humble and careful in our attitude to Him and always honour and reverence Him. His name Yahweh Elohim (*‘He who will be mighty ones’*) contains His purpose with the earth – that He would be revealed first in His son Jesus and secondly in all those who believe, obey Him and are found worthy of immortality.
- 3 *‘Your Kingdom come’*. This includes praying for Jesus to come back. This is what God’s children long for above all things – firstly because then all men will honour God and give Him the glory which is His right and secondly, because they will then be immortal and able to serve God perfectly and thirdly, because all nations will then be blessed.
- 4 *‘Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven’*. This should be our daily prayer, as only when God’s will is done on earth will there be peace for men.

- 5 'Give us today our daily bread'. This is nearly all we need for life – the food for the day and we must not forget to feed on our spiritual bread (God's Word) so that we can grow in the Truth day by day. We know our Heavenly Father gives us countless more blessings and we must not forget to thank Him for these.
- 6 'Forgive us our debts' – we need to pray each day for this forgiveness and we know if we are truly trying to please God, He will forgive us for Jesus' sake.
- 7 'As we also have forgiven our debtors' – if we do not forgive others, we cannot expect God to forgive us. (Remember the parable of the two debtors – Matthew 18v23-35).
- 8 'And lead us not into temptation but deliver us from evil'. – We need to pray to be delivered from temptation and evil because we are easily drawn away by our own evil desires, as James explains. God does test us, but has promised we will not be tried above our strength. In times of trial and testing we need to pray all the more, as Jesus did, to gain help from our Heavenly Father, for nothing is too difficult for Him to do. We can pray anywhere or at any time. Nehemiah said a short prayer before he answered the King, and God heard it, he was blessed with a favourable reply from the King. (Neh. 2v48). It is good to praise God when we are happy as well as to ask for help in times of trouble.

6.5 Christ will then fulfil the PROMISES made to the faithful men and women of all ages:-

Abraham – *"The LORD said to Abram after Lot had parted from him, "Lift up your eyes from where you are and look north and south, east and west. All the land that you see I will give to you and your offspring forever. I will make your offspring like the dust of the earth, so that if anyone could count the dust, then your offspring could be counted. Go, walk through the length and breadth of the land, for I am giving it to you." (Genesis 13v14-17). Paul shows that this seed is Christ – "The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. The Scripture does not say "and to seeds," meaning many people, but "and to your seed," meaning one person, who is Christ. (Galatians 3v16).*

David - *".....He is the one who will build a house for my Name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever....." (2 Samuel 7v12-21); "He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David," (Luke 1v32).*

Job – *"I know that my Redeemer lives, and that in the end he will stand upon the earth. And after my skin has been destroyed, yet in my flesh I will see God; I myself will see him with my own eyes--I, and not another. How my heart yearns within me!" (Job 19v25-27).*

Daniel - *"At that time Michael, the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people--everyone whose name is found written in the book--will be delivered. Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever!...." and "Go your way, Daniel, because the words are closed up and sealed until the time of the end. Many will be purified, made spotless and refined, but the wicked will continue to be wicked. None of the wicked will understand, but those who are wise will understand. "From the time that the daily sacrifice is abolished and the abomination that causes desolation is set up, there will be 1,290 days. Blessed is the one who waits for and reaches the end of the 1,335 days. "As for you, go your way till the end. You will rest, and then at the end of the days you will rise to receive your allotted inheritance." (Daniel 12v1-3; 9-13).*

Believers of all generations – *“For just as through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.”* (Romans 5v8-9 & 19; 6v23). *“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”*

6.6 Christ is the perfect sacrifice for sin. Read Hebrews 9v8-14; *“When Christ came as high priest of the good things that are already here, he went through the greater and more perfect tabernacle that is not man-made, that is to say, not a part of this creation. He did not enter by means of the blood of goats and calves; but he entered the Most Holy Place once for all by his own blood, having obtained eternal redemption.”* Hebrews 10v4-22. *“Therefore, when Christ came into the world, he said: ‘Sacrifice and offering you did not desire, but a body you prepared for me; with burnt offerings and sin offerings you were not pleased. Then I said, ‘Here I am--it is written about me in the scroll-- I have come to do your will, O God.’ First he said, ‘Sacrifices and offerings, burnt offerings and sin offerings you did not desire, nor were you pleased with them’ (although the law required them to be made). Then he said, ‘Here I am, I have come to do your will.’ He sets aside the first to establish the second. And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.”*

Christ did not die instead of us, but as the human representative with a perfect character, through whom our sins are forgiven. *“Then he opened their minds so they could understand the Scriptures. He told them, ‘This is what is written: The Christ will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, and repentance and forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.’”* (Luke 24v45-47); *“In him we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, in accordance with the riches of God’s grace.”* (Ephesians 1v7); *“For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.”* (Colossians 1v13-14).

Questions

- 104 Why did Christ rise from the grave?
- 105 With what nature did he rise?
- a) immortal/everlasting nature
 - b) mortal/human nature
 - c) Spirit nature
- 106 What is Christ's nature now?
- 107 Could Christ have died a second time?
- a) yes because he was born from Mary
 - b) no because he was immortal
 - c) yes because Joseph was his father
- 108 When was Christ seen to ascend into heaven?
- 109 What did the angels say at the time of His ascension? Quote
- 110 Of what is Christ the firstfruits?
- 111 What is Christ's work now?
- a) He is our mediator to God when we pray
 - b) His work is as the Angels
 - c) As God
- 112 How can we pray to God?
- 113 Do you expect Christ to return to the earth?
- a) No – the Kingdom will be in heaven
 - b) He has already returned
 - c) Yes, shortly
- 114 Name some other men who looked for Christ's return to the earth
- 115 How was Christ a perfect sacrifice for sin?
- 116 Did Christ die instead of us?
- a) yes, we do not die
 - b) yes, Christ died instead of us
 - c) no, Christ represents us

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 7

7.0 CAIN TO ISAAC 3900 BC (approx.) - 1900 BC

7.1 Cain was the first child born to Adam and Eve. He was a farmer - Genesis 4v2-3. He sacrificed to God "...of the fruits of the soil as an offering..." This was not acceptable as Cain ignored the principle of the shedding of blood for a covering for sin. He was angry that God rejected his offering. He killed his brother Abel. He demonstrated the characteristics of sin - disobedience to God, anger, destruction of that which is good - seed of the serpent.

7.1.1

Genesis 4v15-17 (Study)

The Lord had said to Cain "*Where is your brother Abel*" after he had killed Abel - and "*Listen! Your brother's blood cries out to me from the ground. Now you are under a curse and driven from the ground, which opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand. When you work the ground, it will no longer yield its crops for you. You will be a restless wanderer on the earth.*" Then Cain replied v14 "*Today you are driving me from the land, and I will be hidden from your presence; I will be a restless wanderer on the earth, and whoever finds me will kill me.*" Then we have v15 where God said to Cain "*Not so; if anyone kills Cain, he will suffer vengeance seven times over. Then the Lord put a mark on Cain so that no-one who found him would kill him.*" What was that mark? We are not told. Cain was full of self-pity, anger, jealousy and deception with murder. It was obvious that God did not want him killed - he had to suffer, wandering the earth.

So v 16-17 "*Cain went out from the LORD'S presence and lived in the land of Nod, east of Eden. Cain lay with his wife.*" The passage does not say that Cain went to Nod and there found a wife. Cain could have taken his wife with him to Nod. Look at Genesis 5v4 "*...Adam lived 800 years and had other sons and daughters. Altogether Adam lived 930 years and then he died.*" Cain would, therefore, have married one of Adam and Eve's descendants.

Read Acts 17v26 "*From one man he made every nation of men, that they should inhabit the whole earth; and he determined the times set for them and the exact places where they should live.*" Other books and verses to read are:- Romans 5v12; 5v16 & 5v18-19. Now read 1Corinthians 15v45 "*The first man Adam became a living being...*" This would have included the Nephilims.

7.2 Abel was the second child born to Adam and Eve. He was a shepherd. He sacrificed to God of "*fat portions from some of the firstborn of his flock*" which was acceptable to God, his sins being covered by the animal's blood. - Hebrews 11v4. He was killed by Cain. Abel was the true seed of the woman which was continued after his death in Adam's third son, Seth. Read Genesis 4v25; Hebrews 12v24.

7.3 The faithful seed became more and more corrupted - Genesis 6v1-2, until all except Noah and his family were rejected by God because of their sins. God repented that He had created man. Read Genesis 6v6-7 "*The LORD was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was filled with pain. So the LORD said, "I will wipe mankind, whom I have created,*

from the face of the earth--men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air--for I am grieved that I have made them.”; v11-13.

- 7.4 Noah and his family alone trusted in God. He was instructed to build an ark - Genesis 6v14-22 *“So make yourself an ark of cypress wood; make rooms in it and coat it with pitch inside and out. This is how you are to build it: The ark is to be 450 feet long, 75 feet wide and 45 feet high. Make a roof for it and finish the ark to within 18 inches of the top. Put a door in the side of the ark and make lower, middle and upper decks. I am going to bring floodwaters on the earth to destroy all life under the heavens, every creature that has the breath of life in it. Everything on earth will perish. But I will establish my covenant with you, and you will enter the ark--you and your sons and your wife and your sons' wives with you. You are to bring into the ark two of all living creatures, male and female, to keep them alive with you. Two of every kind of bird, of every kind of animal and of every kind of creature that moves along the ground will come to you to be kept alive. You are to take every kind of food that is to be eaten and store it away as food for you and for them.”* *“Noah did everything just as God commanded him.”* Genesis 7v2-3 *“Take with you seven of every kind of clean animal, a male and its mate, and two of every kind of unclean animal, a male and its mate, and also seven of every kind of bird, male and female, to keep their various kinds alive throughout the earth.”* Over the long period of preparation for the coming deluge his warnings went unheeded. Read Matthew 24v36-39; Hebrews 11v7 – *“By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith.”*

7.4.1. **TYPES/PATTERNS AND THEIR MEANINGS** (Study)

The dictionary says a ‘type’ is ‘an emblem’, ‘that which represents something else’, a ‘sign’, ‘a symbol’, ‘a figure of something to come’. We have an example of this in 1 Peter 3v18-22. Here Peter explains that Noah and his family were ‘*saved through water*’ being safe in the Ark which floated, while the wicked people died. Peter tells us *‘this water symbolises baptism that now saves you also’*. So we see that the historic events of the flood were actually pointing forward to something which was to come ie the saving of believers from death by baptism into Jesus. Abel was hated by his brother just as Jesus’ was hated by his own people who killed him.

- 7.5 The Flood destroyed all human life except Noah and his family who had faith in God and had made adequate preparations and were saved by the same water. God made a COVENANT with Noah that He would not again destroy all mankind by a flood and confirmed this through the sign of the rainbow. Read Genesis 9v11-17 – *“I establish my covenant with you: Never again will all life be cut off by the waters of a flood; never again will there be a flood to destroy the earth.”* *And God said, "This is the sign of the covenant I am making between me and you and every living creature with you, a covenant for all generations to come: I have set my rainbow in the clouds, and it will be the sign of the covenant between me and the earth. Whenever I bring clouds over the earth and the rainbow appears in the clouds, I will remember my covenant between me and you and all living creatures of every kind. Never again will the waters become a flood to destroy all life. Whenever the rainbow appears in the clouds, I will see it and remember the everlasting covenant between God and all living creatures of every kind on the earth." So God said to Noah, "This is the sign of the covenant I have established between me and all life on the earth.".*
- 7.6 Noah’s three children formed the foundation of the new human race. Genesis 9v19. *“These were the three sons of Noah, and from them came the people who were scattered over the earth.”* Their names were Shem, Ham and Japheth.

7.6.1

NEPHILIM (GIANTS) AND SONS OF GOD**Genesis 6v2-4**

(Study)

In Luke 20v36 Jesus teaches that immortal Sons of God like the angels - cannot die and do not marry. The original Hebrew word for 'giant' is 'Nephilim'. Genesis 6v4 was before the flood and Numbers 13v33 was after the flood - these were not 'fallen angels' or 'fallen sons of God'. In Numbers 13v33 – *“We saw the Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from the Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them.”* - and Numbers 13v22 *“the descendants of Anak”* and in Deuteronomy 9v2 *“The people are strong and tall--Anakites!”*

Genesis 6v4 it states *“They were the heroes of old, men of renown.”* These men had fallen into unbelief of the true God the God of Israel - and through them, the earth was full of violence as Genesis 6v11 says – *“Now the earth was corrupt in God's sight and was full of violence.”* Verse 5 *“The LORD saw how great man's wickedness on the earth”* - believers were marrying unbelievers, and as a result of this, God destroyed them by a flood. Only Noah and his family of true believers were saved, 8 altogether - yet we find the Nephilim (original word for Giants) still in the earth after the flood - Numbers 13v33.

In the Bible “the sons of God” can be men as the following verses show...

1John 3v2 *“Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, (Christ, who is immortal and whose body is energised by Spirit Power).”*

Romans 8v14 - The context in v13 *“For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live,”* - shows that the apostle is speaking to men - believers. V 14 - *“because those who are led by the Spirit of God (ie God's Word which is Spirit) are the sons of God.”* This is in harmony with:

Luke 20v35 *“But those who are considered worthy of taking part in that age and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage, and they can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are God's children, since they are children of the resurrection.”*

So then, we must always be guided by the context of the verse in question as to whether the ‘sons of God’ are immortal angels - or mortal men - as the context of Numbers 13v33 shows them to be. Giants or ‘Nephilim’ in the Hebrew were the sons of Anak - the mighty men, not angels.

7.7 Man again ignored his Creator, and in pride started to build a high tower at Babel. God caused the people to be scattered from Mesopotamia and to spread across the world. To ensure their dispersion God confounded their language. Genesis 11v6-9 – *“The LORD said, “If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them. Come, let us go down and confuse their language so they will not understand each other.” So the LORD scattered them from there over all the earth, and they stopped building the city. That is why it was called Babel--because there the LORD confused the language of the whole world. From there the LORD scattered them over the face of the whole earth.”*

7.8 God chose ABRAM (later named ABRAHAM), as one of his special servants (Genesis 11v31; 12v1-3). Because of Abraham's trust and obedience God made a covenant with him.

7.8.1 The COVENANT (or Promise) to ABRAHAM.

7.8.2 This promise is in two parts:-

- 1 **That in Abraham and his seed all nations of the earth will be blessed:** *“I will make you into a great nation and I will bless you; I will make your name great, and you will be a blessing. I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you I will curse; and all peoples on earth will be blessed through you.”* – Genesis 12v2-3. The seed of Abraham was the Jewish people, but there is also a particular **“seed”** referred to here – **Jesus Christ** – through whom these blessings should come. *“He redeemed us in order that the blessing given to Abraham might come to the Gentiles through Christ Jesus, so that by faith we might receive the promise of the Spirit.”* *“The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. The Scripture does not say “and to seeds”, meaning many people, but “and to your seed”, meaning one person, **who is Christ**”* – Galatians 3v14 and 16.
- 2 **That Abraham and his seed should inherit the land of Canaan for ever:** *“The LORD said to Abram after Lot had parted from him, “Lift up your eyes from where you are and look north and south, east and west. All the land that you see I will give to you and your offspring forever. I will make your offspring like the dust of the earth, so that if anyone could count the dust, then your offspring could be counted. Go, walk through the length and breadth of the land, for I am giving it to you.”* – Genesis 13v14-17.

7.8.3 These two promises constitute the basis of the Gospel message preached by Christ, which is the Good News of the Kingdom of God to be established on earth. *“The Scripture foresaw that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and **announced the gospel in advance to Abraham:** “All nations will be blessed through you.”* – Galatians 3v8. These are the promises in which all true Christians must put their faith and hope. *“You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”* – Galatians 3v26-29. Read also: Mark 1v14-15; 16v15-16; Galatians 1v8-12; Ephesians 2v11-13.

7.8.4 Abraham was an example of FAITH and OBEDIENCE. Hebrews 11v8-13,17-19 – *“By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, “It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned.” Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death.”* He was called “God’s friend” – James 2v23 – *“... the scripture was fulfilled that says, “Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness,” and he was called God’s friend.”*

7.8.5 These promises, known in the New Testament as the New Covenant or Gospel, have not yet been fulfilled but will be when the Kingdom of God is established. Hebrews 11v39-40 – *“These were all commended for their faith, yet none of them received what had been promised. God had planned something better for us so that only together with us would they be made perfect.”* Acts 7v5; Romans 4v13-25.

7.8.6 Confirmation of the Covenant by an Oath and by the birth, death and resurrection of Christ. Genesis 15v8-18; 17v9-14; Galatians 3v17; Hebrews 6v13-18 – *“When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, saying, “I will surely bless you and give you many descendants.” And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised. Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument. Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was promised, he confirmed it with an oath. God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which it is*

impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to take hold of the hope offered to us may be greatly encouraged."

7.8.7 God will fulfil His Promise to Abraham. Read Micah 7v20; Mark 12v26-27; Matthew 8v11- *"I say to you that many will come from the east and the west, and will take their places at the feast with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven."*

7.8.7.1 **"Before Abraham was born, I am!"**

John 8v58

(Study)

"I tell you the truth," Jesus answered, "before Abraham was born, I am!"

Christ's reference to Abraham. Is to affirm his (Christ's) pre-eminence, not pre-existence. The Jews had claimed that Abraham was their father (v39) and so Christ establishes his pre-eminence in the divine purpose by stating that before Abraham was, *"I am"*. He did not say *"before Abraham was born, I was"* as it is frequently misread, but *"before Abraham was born, I am!"*

But the Jews, like modern-day Trinitarians, misunderstood Jesus. He was not claiming to be literally older in years than Abraham. This is indicated by his prior remark: *"Your father Abraham rejoiced at the thought of seeing my day; he saw it and was glad."* (v56). Abraham, to whom the gospel was preached (Galatians 3v8), *"seeing"* the day of Christ through the eye of faith. *"He was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake"* (1Peter 1v20). He was chosen or foreordained in the divine purpose, but not formed. Similarly in the divine purpose he was *"the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world."* (Revelations. 13v8) but in reality he was not slain until his crucifixion in the time of Pilate.

There is no proof that Christ alludes to the divine name (imperfectly rendered by the KJV... (*"I am that I am."* NIV states (*"I am who I am"*). Jesus simply uses the present tense of the verb *"to be"*. Even if this verse were intended to be read as an allusion to the divine name, this is not proof that Christ was claiming to be *"Very God"*. The divine name declared, *"I will be what I will be"*. (Exodus 3v14 RSV mg.) The name was a prophetic declaration of the divine purpose. Jesus Christ was *"God manifest in the flesh"* (AV) *"He appeared in a body"* (NIV) (1Timothy 3v16), *"the word"* (Greek: logos) *became flesh"* (John 1v14). As such, he was the expression of the divine character, *"full of grace and truth"* (John 1v14 compare with Exodus 33v19), and he became the *"firstborn among many brothers"*. (Romans 8v29). Christ was the **result** of the word made flesh not the originator of the divine plan. As he himself said, *"I came from God and now am here. I have not come on my own; but he sent me"* (John 8v42). Jesus became immortal before Abraham. 1 Corinthians 15v3-6 *"For what I received I passed on to you as of first importance: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that he appeared to Peter, and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of the brothers at the same time, most of whom are still living, though some have fallen asleep."*

7.8.8 The Promises to Abraham became a national hope. Read Luke 1v55 – *"to Abraham and his descendants forever, even as he said to our fathers."* And 72-73.

7.8.9 Abraham's wife was Sarah. Abraham had two sons. The first by Sarah's handmaid (Hagar) named Ishmael – for type see Galatians 4v22-26. The second by Sarah named ISAAC. He was the child of promise. Abraham was instructed to sacrifice Isaac – a type of Christ: *"By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death."* – Hebrews 11v17-19. Abraham died at the age of 175 years, Genesis 25v7, and he was buried in the Cave of Machpelah near Mamre. Genesis 25v9.

7.9 Promises to Abraham renewed to Isaac – Genesis 26v3-4 – *“Stay in this land for a while, and I will be with you and will bless you. For to you and your descendants I will give all these lands and will confirm the oath I swore to your father Abraham. I will make your descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and will give them all these lands, and through your offspring all nations on earth will be blessed.....”* Psalm 105v9; Hebrews 11v8-9. Isaac’s wife – Rebekah, Genesis 24v15-67. Isaac’s two sons – Esau and Jacob. – Genesis 25v20-28. The elder to serve the younger – God’s selection, not man’s. Isaac blesses Jacob. Genesis 27v26-29 – *“Then his father Isaac said to him, “Come here, my son, and kiss me.” So he went to him and kissed him. When Isaac caught the smell of his clothes, he blessed him and said, “Ah, the smell of my son is like the smell of a field that the LORD has blessed. May God give you of heaven’s dew and of earth’s richness—an abundance of grain and new wine. May nations serve you and peoples bow down to you. Be lord over your brothers, and may the sons of your mother bow down to you. May those who curse you be cursed and those who bless you be blessed.”*

7.9.1 **Why was Isaac only recognised by Abraham and not Ishmael?** (Study)

God shows why in Galatians 4v21. Here you will see that the two sons of Abraham represented the two covenants.

Ishmael = the Old covenant - of bondservant - or slave. For Ishmael was the son of Abraham’s slave - Hagar the Egyptian, representing the bondage *to sin* (v23) *“born in the ordinary way”*.

Isaac = The New covenant - the promise of eternal life (freedom from sin) born again, (Gal. 5v1) *“It is for freedom that Christ has set us free (by his sacrifice of sin nature). Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery. 1Peter 2v24 – “He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree” i.e. - Born of a tempted nature - Hebrews 4v15.*

Isaac was the son of the promise - born by a miracle after Sarah was past bearing children (Romans 9v9; Genesis 17v17). It was of God’s doing (v19). He represented Christ - also born by a miracle (Luke 1v35) the NEW covenant. Ishmael represents the flesh - condemned if they could not keep God’s law. Isaac represents the Spirit - of forgiveness under the New covenant.

- (a) *Flesh* crucified (put to death)
- (b) Resurrection to life eternal - freedom from *SIN*. John 8v34

From Isaac came the Jewish race (Abraham, Isaac and Jacob)
From Ishmael came the Arab races.

God said to Abraham - *“It is through Isaac (the Jewish race) that your offspring will be reckoned.”* - Romans 9v7-8. Jesus (God’s Son) said, *“Salvation is from the Jews”* - John 4v22. Jesus was a Jew and through him alone salvation from death came. He was the firstfruits - the first to be raised from the dead. (1Corinthians 15v23).

Now just because they are the children of Abraham it doesn’t make them God’s children, whether they are Jew or Arab - Romans 9v6-8. John 8v34-40 - *“If you were Abraham’s children,” said Jesus, “then you would do the things Abraham did. As it is, you are determined to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham did not do such things.”* Romans 9v8 *“In other words, it is not the natural children who are God’s children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as Abraham’s offspring.”* – *“If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”* - (Galatians 3v29). The same idea is seen in Romans 4v3: *“What does the Scripture say? “Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness”* (also see v24).

Therefore we see from the above scripture why it was that Isaac was recognised by Abraham, and not Ishmael; and from Galatians 4v29 we see that *“At that time the son born in the ordinary way persecuted the son born by the power of the Spirit. It is the same now.”* Yes, **even now** the scriptures show us in the 83rd Psalm - the descendants of Ishmael (Arabs) intention towards the descendants of Isaac - the Jews in v4; and from verses 6-8 gives the list of the Arab, Egyptian, and Muslim nations who are persecuting the sons of Israel even to this day - and verses 11-18 shows God's Mind and intention towards them.

It is also interesting to note the types or patterns in Genesis 22 and the Spirit's comments upon them in Hebrews 11v17-19:

- 1) Abraham commanded by God to offer up a sacrifice to Him his only begotten son - his beloved son Isaac, the promised seed.
- 2) The 3 days journey to the place of the sacrifice - Mt. Moriah, Jerusalem, a city where Jesus was crucified.
- 3) The wood (cross/tree) carried by Isaac – (Genesis 22v6) Jesus carried his wooden cross.
- 4) The staying of Abraham's knife by the Angel, and a ram offered instead - signifying the animal offerings under the law of Moses.
- 5) The type or pattern in Isaac of the resurrection of Jesus - Hebrews 11v9.

Questions

- 117 Who were the first two sons of Adam and Eve?
- a) Jacob and Esua
 - b) Cain and Abel
 - c) Enock and Seth
- 118 Why was Abel's offering acceptable but Cain's was not?
- 119 In what way did the earth become wicked?
- 120 Because of man's wickedness, did God repent that he had made man?
- 121 Whom did God choose to save because he was righteous?
- 122 How was mankind to be destroyed?
- a) by fire
 - b) by hail
 - c) by flood
- 123 How was Noah to be saved? Can we see a "type"/"pattern" in this? Please explain
- 124 What was the Covenant and sign given to Noah?
- 125 How many were saved and who were the sons of Noah?
- 126 What did the people do after the Flood?
- a) built a high tower at Babel
 - b) made a golden calf
 - c) sacrificed to God
- 127 What did God do to the people?
- 128 What were the promises that God made to Abraham? List all of them
- 129 How did God guarantee these promises?
- 130 Who is the singular "seed" in the promise to Abraham?
- a) Isaac
 - b) Moses
 - c) Jesus
- 131 Who is the 'many' seed?
- 132** How can Abraham possess the land seeing he is now dead?
- a) because he is in heaven
 - b) he will be raised from the dead
 - c) he possesses it now
- 133** What is the word used to describe these promises in the New Testament?
- 134** Is this the same Gospel preached by Christ?
- a) it is not preached today
 - b) not the same Gospel

- c) it is the same Gospel
- 135** What does the word "Gospel" mean?
- 136** Do these promises apply only to the Jew?
- 137** What are the great examples from the life of Abraham?
- 138** How can these promises apply to us?
 - a) the promise of life in heaven
 - b) the promise applies to everyone
 - c) by baptism and obedience to God and Christ's commandments
- 139** Were these promises confirmed in other parts of Scripture? Quote
- 140** Who was Abraham's wife?
- 141** Who were Abraham's sons?
- 142** How did Isaac become a type or pattern of Christ?
- 143** In what way did Ishmael and Isaac represent the Old and New Covenants?
- 144** Were the promises to Abraham renewed to Isaac?
- 145** Who was Isaac's wife?
 - a) Rebekah
 - b) Sarah
 - c) Rachael
- 146** What were the names of Isaac's children?
- 147** Who was the elder of these children?
 - a) Jacob
 - b) Esau
 - c) Joseph
- 148** Who was chosen by God, Jacob or Esau? and what is the lesson to us?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 8

8.0 HISTORY FROM JACOB TO THE LAW OF MOSES - 1900 - 1600 BC

8.1 Promises renewed to Jacob. Genesis 28v13-14 – *“There above it stood the LORD, and he said: “I am the LORD, the God of your father Abraham and the God of Isaac. I will give you and your descendants the land on which you are lying. Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and to the east, to the north and to the south. All peoples on earth will be blessed through you and your offspring.”* Jacob's two wives were Leah and Rachel. Jacob's name was changed to Israel (Prince with God) Genesis 32v28. His twelve Sons formed the tribes of Israel.

Leah's children: Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Isaachar, Zebulon. By handmaid Zilpah: Gad and Asher.

Rachel's children: Joseph and Benjamin. By handmaid Bilhar: Dan and Naphtali.

8.2.1 Joseph - Genesis chapters 37 to 50. He had two dreams. Genesis 37v5-10 – *“Joseph had a dream, and when he told it to his brothers, they hated him all the more. He said to them, “Listen to this dream I had: We were binding sheaves of grain out in the field when suddenly my sheaf rose and stood upright, while your sheaves gathered around mine and bowed down to it.” His brothers said to him, “Do you intend to reign over us? Will you actually rule us?” And they hated him all the more because of his dream and what he had said. Then he had another dream, and he told it to his brothers. “Listen,” he said, “I had another dream, and this time the sun and moon and eleven stars were bowing down to me.” When he told his father as well as his brothers, his father rebuked him and said, “What is this dream you had? Will your mother and I and your brothers actually come and bow down to the ground before you?”. He was sold to the Ishmalites by his brothers, (Genesis 37v25-28) who took him to Egypt and then he was sold to Potiphar, one of Pharaoh's officers.. He was imprisoned and there he interpreted the dreams of the butler and baker. Genesis 40v8 – *“Then Joseph said to them, “Do not interpretations belong to God? Tell me your dreams.” So the chief cupbearer told Joseph his dream. He said to him, “In my dream I saw a vine in front of me, and on the vine were three branches. As soon as it budded, it blossomed, and its clusters ripened into grapes. Pharaoh's cup was in my hand, and I took the grapes, squeezed them into Pharaoh's cup and put the cup in his hand.” “This is what it means,” Joseph said to him. “The three branches are three days. Within three days Pharaoh will lift up your head and restore you to your position, and you will put Pharaoh's cup in his hand, just as you used to do when you were his cupbearer. But when all goes well with you, remember me and show me kindness; mention me to Pharaoh and get me out of this prison.**

For I was forcibly carried off from the land of the Hebrews, and even here I have done nothing to deserve being put in a dungeon.” When the chief baker saw that Joseph had given a favourable interpretation, he said to Joseph, “I too had a dream: On my head were three baskets of bread. In the top basket were all kinds of baked goods for Pharaoh, but the birds were eating them out of the basket on my head.” “This is what it means,” Joseph said. “The

three baskets are three days. Within three days Pharaoh will lift off your head and hang you on a tree. And the birds will eat away your flesh.” Pharaoh also had a dream (Genesis 41v1-6) and this was interpreted by Joseph. Genesis 41v25-32. *“The dreams of Pharaoh are one and the same. God has revealed to Pharaoh what he is about to do. The seven good cows are seven years, and the seven good heads of grain are seven years; it is one and the same dream. The seven lean, ugly cows that came up afterward are seven years, and so are the seven worthless heads of grain scorched by the east wind: They are seven years of famine. “It is just as I said to Pharaoh: God has shown Pharaoh what he is about to do. Seven years of great abundance are coming throughout the land of Egypt, but seven years of famine will follow them. Then all the abundance in Egypt will be forgotten, and the famine will ravage the land. The abundance in the land will not be remembered, because the famine that follows it will be so severe. The reason the dream was given to Pharaoh in two forms is that the matter has been firmly decided by God, and God will do it soon.....”* There was famine in Egypt and the surrounding nations. Joseph’s brothers were sent to Egypt by Jacob to buy corn. Simeon was held hostage. At Joseph’s request his brothers made a second journey to Egypt with Benjamin (Genesis 43). Joseph sent for Jacob (Genesis 45 and 46). Jacob and family (seventy persons in all - Exodus 1v5) moved to the land of Goshen and they increased in number. The reason for Joseph being sent to Egypt: *“You intended to harm me, but God intended it for good to accomplish what is now being done, **the saving of many lives.**”* - Genesis 50v20.

- 8.3 Israel became slaves to the Egyptians - Exodus 1v7-14 – Exodus 1v7-14 *“the Israelites were fruitful and multiplied greatly and became exceedingly numerous, so that the land was filled with them. Then a new king, who did not know about Joseph, came to power in Egypt. “Look,” he said to his people, “the Israelites have become much too numerous for us. Come, we must deal shrewdly with them or they will become even more numerous and, if war breaks out, will join our enemies, fight against us and leave the country.” So they put slave masters over them to oppress them with forced labor, and they built Pithom and Rameses as store cities for Pharaoh. But the more they were oppressed, the more they multiplied and spread; so the Egyptians came to dread the Israelites and worked them ruthlessly. They made their lives bitter with hard labor in brick and mortar and with all kinds of work in the fields; in all their hard labor the Egyptians used them ruthlessly.”*
- 8.4 Moses’ birth. He was educated in Pharaoh’s palace. He killed an Egyptian when he was 40 years old. He fled to Midian and married Zipporah, Reuel’s daughter Exodus 2. At the age of 80 years, Moses saw a bush burning where God revealed His Memorial Name: *“God said to Moses, “I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: ‘I AM has sent me to you.’”* God also said to Moses, *“Say to the Israelites, ‘The LORD, the God of your fathers--the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob--has sent me to you.’ This is my name for ever, the name by which I am to be remembered from generation to generation.”* - Exodus 3v14-15. Moses returned to Egypt and met Aaron, who performed miraculous signs before Israel - Exodus 4v1-9 and v29-30, and before Pharaoh - Exodus 7v8-12. The ten plagues were: water into blood, frogs, lice, gnats, livestock, boils, hail, locusts, darkness, death of firstborn. Read Exodus chapters 7-12. The Passover – Exodus ch 12. Exodus chapter 13 relates to the consecration of the firstborn and its significance to Christ. Israel left Egypt four hundred and thirty years after the original promise to Abraham. Exodus 12v40 (over six hundred thousand men, plus women and children left Egypt). Israel was guided by a pillar of cloud by day and pillar of fire by night. When crossing the Red Sea, Israel was completely separated from Egypt by the returning waters, symbolizing a baptism into Moses pointing forward to the death and resurrection of Christ. Read 1Corinthians 10v 1 – 11 – *“For I do not want you to be ignorant of the fact, brothers, that our forefathers were all under the cloud and that they all passed through the sea. They were all baptised into Moses in the cloud and in the sea.....”* See summaries in Acts 7v15-36 and Hebrews 11v24-29.

- 8.5 WILDERNESS JOURNEY Israel do not go directly to the Promised Land (Canaan) but WERE led south by God to Mount Sinai. Read Exodus 16v1.
- 8.5.1 They complained of the lack of water - God miraculously provided water. Marah and Horeb. Exodus 15 & 17.
- 8.5.2 They complained of the lack of food - God miraculously provided manna and quails. Exodus 16.
- 8.5.3 God's presence appears before Israel at Mount Sinai, and their response Exodus 19.
- 8.5.4 Israel are God's chosen people and are formed as His Kingdom. Deuteronomy 7v6-9. Exodus 19v6 - "A kingdom of priests".
- 8.5.5 This Kingdom was to continue until God overthrew it, because of Israel's wickedness, one thousand and fourteen years later in the siege against Zedekiah the last king of Judah, as prophesied by Ezekiel: "*O profane and wicked prince of Israel, whose day has come, whose time of punishment has reached its climax, this is what the Sovereign LORD says: Take off the turban, remove the crown. It will not be as it was: The lowly will be exalted and the exalted will be brought low. A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it.*" – Ezekiel 21v25-27.

8.6 THE KINGDOM OF GOD IN THE PAST (Study)

We ought to bridge the historical gap between the Exodus and the days of Jesus. On coming out of Egypt, the people of Israel miraculously crossed the Red Sea and then were made to spend forty years in the wilderness, when those who were rebellious were Divinely purged out. Later, under Joshua, they were led into the Promised Land and established there under the *Rule* of the Judges. This form of government was later changed in the days of Samuel the Prophet because of the national desire to have a king to rule over them like the surrounding peoples. The words of the Almighty on this are worth turning up and reading thoughtfully. They are to be found in 1Samuel 8v7-9. Again there is the link with the Exodus and added to it is the statement that they were really rejecting God who reigned over them. So we note that here was the Kingdom of God in the past. The *Rule* by human kings, however, was permitted from then on. The names of Saul, David and Solomon come to mind. The latter unwisely married an Egyptian who was the daughter of the Pharaoh of the period. (1Kings 11v1-2)

The Ten Tribes were taken into captivity by the king of Assyria. The last king of Israel was Hoshea. The Two Tribes ended at King Zedekiah - king of Judah. These twelve Tribes are known as the Kingdom of God. So the Kingdom of God in the past ended with King Zedekiah.

Israel went astray in the time of king Zedekiah. The kingdom was broken up and the Jews taken into captivity by Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon. To Judah's king Zedekiah came this message by one of the prophets: "*O profane and wicked prince of Israel (king Zedekiah).... Take off the turban, remove the crown.... A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he (Jesus) comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it.*" – Ezekiel 21v25-27.

The prophet declared God's message in no uncertain terms and included in it a reminder to the Jews of the Exodus, telling them that because they had failed to learn the lessons of the past when they had been the recipients of God's mercy, they would not have to learn it by His judgments upon them.

Their last King Zedekiah - King of Judah - had failed; but God's purpose was not frustrated: the Son of Promise was yet to come. The New Testament tells us specifically who that was. We find the

information in Luke's Gospel narrative where he records the message of the angel Gabriel to Mary concerning Jesus; *"He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob for ever; his kingdom will never end"* (Luke 1v31-33).

8.6.1 The Kingdom will only be restored when Christ, *"to whom it rightfully belongs"* returns. — Ezekiel 21v25-27; Acts 17v31 *"For he has set a day when he will judge the world with justice by the man he has appointed. He has given proof of this to all men by raising him from the dead."*

8.6.2 Because the Kingdom of God will be based upon the Kingdom of Israel as it was in the past, and because Jesus and those to whom the promises were originally made, were all Jews, Jesus says *"salvation is from the ' Jews"* - John 4v22. Read also Deuteronomy 5v6 and 14v2 – *"for you are a people holy to the LORD your God. Out of all the peoples on the face of the earth, the LORD has chosen you to be his treasured possession."*

8.6.3 We can have hope in this Kingdom of God by believing these promises and by being baptised. Galatians 3v22; Romans 6v3-4; James 2v5. Mark 16v16 *"Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned."*

8.6.4

Questions

149. Who were Jacob's wives?

- a) Rebekah
- b) Leah
- c) Rachael

150. What was Jacob's name changed to?

151. How many sons did Jacob have? Name some of them.

152. Outline the story of Joseph

153. Explain some of the dreams that Joseph interpreted

154. What reason does the Bible give for Joseph being sold into Egypt?

- a) he wanted to go to Egypt
- b) his brothers were jealous of him
- c) because he was a slave

155. How many Israelites came into Egypt and where did they live?

156. After Joseph's death how did the Egyptians treat the Jews?

- a) with great respect
- b) as princes
- c) as slaves

157. Who was born to deliver Israel out of Egypt?

158. Outline the story of Moses until God spoke to him out of the burning bush

159. How old was Moses when he left Egypt and how long was he in Midian?

160. Who helped Moses on his return to Egypt?

- a) Aaron

- b) Jephthah
 - c) Pharoah
161. What signs did Moses show to Israel and to Pharaoh?
162. How many plagues were there? Name some, including the last.
163. What special preparations did Israel make before the last plague and what did this become known as?
164. What was the significance of this act and to whom did it point forward?
165. Do the Jews still celebrate this event?
166. How were Israel guided after leaving Egypt?
- a) by an Angel
 - b) by cloud by day and fire by night
 - c) by Moses
167. What happened at the Red Sea?
168. After Israel crossed the Red Sea where did they go?
169. How were Israel fed in the wilderness?
170. How did the people get water?
171. For what purpose did God call Moses up into Mount Sinai?
172. What did God say to Israel at Sinai, and what was their answer?
173. Were Israel now God's Kingdom on earth?
174. Does this Kingdom still exist?
- a) it does not exist now
 - b) it is the Kingdom of God in heaven
 - c) the Kingdom did not end
175. Why and when was it overthrown?
176. Quote a verse which foretold the overthrowing of this Kingdom
177. When will it be restored and who will restore it?
178. What did Jesus mean when He said, 'Salvation is of the Jews'?
179. How is it possible for Gentiles to receive salvation?
- a) by praying to God
 - b) be blessed by a priest
 - c) by baptism into Christ

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 9

9.0 HISTORY OF ISRAEL FROM THE LAW TO THE KINGS - 1600 - 1100 BC

- 9.1 Moses received the Ten Commandments. - Exodus 20. This is called the Law of Moses. Exodus 20v2-3 *"I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery. "You shall have no other gods before me."*
- 9.1.1 Moses was called up into Mount Sinai to receive the tables of stone, instructions concerning sacrifice and details of the tabernacle (a meeting place between God and man). Moses was forty days in the Mount with Joshua. Exodus 24v12-13 – *"The LORD said to Moses, "Come up to me on the mountain and stay here, and I will give you the tablets of stone, with the law and commands I have written for their instruction." Then Moses set out with Joshua his aide, and Moses went up on the mountain of God.";* In Exodus 25v8-9 God tells Moses about the design of the tabernacle.
- 9.1.2 While Moses was in the Mountain, the Israelites, under Aaron, made a golden calf and worshipped it - Exodus 32v1-4 *"When the people saw that Moses was so long in coming down from the mountain, they gathered around Aaron and said, "Come, make us gods who will go before us. As for this fellow Moses who brought us up out of Egypt, we don't know what has happened to him." Aaron answered them, "Take off the gold earrings that your wives, your sons and your daughters are wearing, and bring them to me." So all the people took off their earrings and brought them to Aaron. He took what they handed him and made it into an idol cast in the shape of a calf, fashioning it with a tool. Then they said, "These are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt." God is very angry – *"Go down, because your people, whom you brought up out of Egypt, have become corrupt." "I have seen these people," the LORD said to Moses, "and they are a stiff-necked people. Now leave me alone so that my anger may burn against them and that I may destroy them. Then I will make you into a great nation."* Moses intercedes - Exodus 32v11 *"But Moses sought the favor of the LORD his God. "O LORD," he said, "why should your anger burn against your people, whom you brought out of Egypt with great power and a mighty hand?."**
- 9.2 God's covenant with Israel. Exodus 19v5-6 and 8: *"Now if you obey me fully and keep my covenant, then out of all nations you will be my treasured possession. Although the whole earth is mine, you will be for me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.' These are the words you are to speak to the Israelites."* *"The people all responded together, "We will do everything the LORD has said." So Moses brought their answer back to the LORD."* Read also Exodus 34v10-17 – *"Then the LORD said: "I am making a covenant with you. Before all your people I will do wonders never before done in any nation in all the world. The people you live among will see how awesome is the work that I, the LORD, will do for you." ; Deuteronomy 4v12-13 – "Then the LORD spoke to you out of the fire. You heard the sound of words but saw no form; there was only a voice. He declared to you his covenant, the Ten Commandments, which he commanded you to follow and then wrote them on two stone tablets."*

9.2.1 Israel was commanded by God to drive out the people of Canaan. - Exodus 34v10-17 – “Obey what I command you today. I will drive out before you the Amorites, Canaanites, Hittites, Perizzites, Hivites and Jebusites. Be careful not to make a treaty with those who live in the land where you are going, or they will be a snare among you. Break down their altars, smash their sacred stones and cut down their Asherah poles. Do not worship any other god, for the LORD, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.”.

9.2.2 Blessings and cursings to come upon Israel. - Deuteronomy chapter 28.
Blessing: Deuteronomy 28 v 1-3 “If you fully obey the LORD your God and carefully follow all his commands I give you today, the LORD your God will set you high above all the nations on earth. All these blessings will come upon you and accompany you if you obey the LORD your God. You will be blessed in the city and blessed in the country.”. etc.
Cursing: Deuteronomy 28v15-16 “However, if you do not obey the LORD your God and do not carefully follow all his commands and decrees I am giving you today, all these curses will come upon you and overtake you: You will be cursed in the city and cursed in the country.” etc.

9.2.2.1

WITCHCRAFT (Study)

Galatians 5v19-21 – “The **acts of the sinful nature** are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and **witchcraft**; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.”

Deuteronomy 18v10 “Let no-one be found among you (Israel) who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practises divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in **witchcraft**, or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead.” A necromancer (KJV) - is the art of predicting by means of communication with the dead, magic, enchantments. **God’s Word says that the dead are dead** - not alive - Ecclesiastes 9v5 “For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing.” Psalm 146v4 speaking of those who die, “When their spirit departs, they return to the ground; on that very day **their plans come to nothing.**” THEREFORE NO ONE **CAN COMMUNICATE WITH THE DEAD** - God’s Spirit Word says so. God declares in Deuteronomy 18v12 “Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you.”

The first king of Israel, Saul, sinned by going to a witch at Endor. 1Samuel 28v5-9 because God had left him. GOD USED THE WITCH who could ‘mind read’ to punish Saul who had disobeyed his law - by putting His Words into her mouth - see verse 19 of 1Samuel 28 – “The LORD will hand over both Israel and you to the Philistines, and tomorrow you and your sons will be with me. The LORD will also hand over the army of Israel to the Philistines.”. Now look at 1Chronicles 10v13 – “Saul died because he was unfaithful to the LORD; he did not keep the word of the LORD, and even consulted a medium for guidance.” Witchcraft is no more than mind reading. In England it is called SPIRITUALISM. Some people can read the minds of other people and they use this power to deceive them into thinking they are in touch with the dead. By this means the woman (witch) of Endor knew that it was Saul who had come to see her - 1Samuel 28v12.

In Deuteronomy 18v18 God showed who were His True Prophets. He says, “I will raise up for them (Israel) a prophet like you (Moses) from among their brothers; I will put my words in his mouth, and he will tell them everything I command him.” Here then, is a true prophet foretold - Jesus Christ. Acts 3v22 - The apostle Peter quotes this verse in Deuteronomy 18v18 “For Moses said, ‘The Lord your God will raise up for you (the nation of Israel, the Jews) a prophet like me (Moses) from among your own.’” So when Jesus came and did mighty works (miracles) raising the dead, healing the sick, etc, proving he was from God, he said, “The words I have spoken to you **are spirit and they are life.**” -

John 6v63. Whereas - the words that Saul listened to - were death to him, and all those that listen to witchcraft. The prophet Isaiah - Isaiah 8v19-20 - said, *“When men tell you to consult mediums and spiritists, who whisper and mutter, should not a people (God’s people) enquire of their God? Why consult the dead (or to find out the truth about the dead), on behalf of the living? To the law and to the testimony! (of God - God’s Word, the Bible), If they do not speak according to this word, they have no light of dawn.”* The fact that witchcraft is an abomination to the Lord should warn us not to have anything to do with it.

- 9.3 The Sacrifices under the Law were to cover sin. - Leviticus chapter 1v2-4 *““Speak to the Israelites and say to them: `When any of you brings an offering to the LORD, bring as your offering an animal from either the herd or the flock. “If the offering is a burnt offering from the herd, he is to offer a male without defect. He must present it at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting so that it will be acceptable to the LORD. He is to lay his hand on the head of the burnt offering, and it will be accepted on his behalf to make atonement for him.”*
- 9.3.1 The High Priest went into the Most Holy Place once a year with the blood of an animal as an atonement for the sin of the people and acted as a mediator between God and man. The tabernacle was God's dwelling place among the Israelites. Exodus 25v8 *“Then have them make a sanctuary for me, and I will dwell among them.”* - Leviticus chapter 4 and 16v15-17 *““Say to the Israelites: `When anyone sins unintentionally and does what is forbidden in any of the LORD's commands-- " `If the anointed priest sins, bringing guilt on the people, he must bring to the LORD a young bull without defect as a sin offering for the sin he has committed.”*
- 9.4 The Law of Moses is the Old Covenant. - Hebrews 8v5-13 – *“But the ministry Jesus has received is as superior to theirs as the covenant of which he is mediator is superior to the old one, and it is founded on better promises. For if there had been nothing wrong with that first covenant, no place would have been sought for another. But God found fault with the people and said: “The time is coming, declares the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah..... By calling this covenant “new,” he has made the first one obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear.” Hebrews 9v11-15.*
- 9.4.1 The Old Covenant was finished at the death of Christ. Colossians 2v14: *“having cancelled the written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross.”*
- 9.5 The Promises to Abraham are the New Covenant - although given first they will not be fulfilled until the Kingdom of God is established on the earth. Read: Galatians 3v16-26 – *“The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. The Scripture does not say “and to seeds,” meaning many people, but “and to your seed,” meaning one person, who is Christ. What I mean is this: The law, introduced 430 years later, does not set aside the covenant previously established by God and thus do away with the promise. For if the inheritance depends on the law, then it no longer depends on a promise; but God in his grace gave it to Abraham through a promise.....”; Matthew 26v28-29 – “...The Son of Man will go just as it is written about him. But woe to that man who betrays the Son of Man! It would be better for him if he had not been born.”.....; Hebrews 10v4-10; 10v19-20; 13v20; Romans 15v8.*
- 9.5.1 Under the New Covenant Christ is the mediator between God and man. Hebrews 6v19-20 *“We have this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure. It enters the inner sanctuary behind the curtain, where Jesus, who went before us, has entered on our behalf. He has become a high priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek.”* 1 Timothy 2v5 *“For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus...”*

- 9.5.2 Man can seek forgiveness of sins by prayer through Christ. James 5v15-16 *“And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.”*; Matthew 6v12 *“Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors..... For if you forgive men when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins.”*
- 9.6 Israel prepare to enter the Promised Land. Numbers 13v2 *“Send some men to explore the land of Canaan, which I am giving to the Israelites. From each ancestral tribe send one of its leaders.”* Twelve spies were sent out, one from each tribe; they search the land for forty days and only two brought back a good report (Caleb and Joshua) – Numbers 13v30, 14v30 *“Then Caleb silenced the people before Moses and said, “We should go up and take possession of the land, for we can certainly do it.”* The people murmured against God and said, Numbers 14v2 *“If only we had died in Egypt! Or in this desert! Why is the LORD bringing us to this land only to let us fall by the sword?”* They were forced to remain in the wilderness for forty years until all who were twenty years old and upward and had murmured against God had died - Numbers 14v28-29 *“So tell them, ‘As surely as I live, declares the LORD, I will do to you the very things I heard you say: In this desert your bodies will fall--every one of you twenty years old or more who was counted in the census and who has grumbled against me.”*

There was a rebellion against Moses and Aaron of Korah, Dathan and Abiram with 250 men. Numbers 16v4-5 *“When Moses heard this, he fell facedown. Then he said to Korah and all his followers: “In the morning the LORD will show who belongs to him and who is holy, and he will have that person come near him. The man he chooses he will cause to come near him.”* v16 *“Moses said to Korah, “You and all your followers are to appear before the LORD tomorrow--you and they and Aaron.”* V31-33 *“As soon as he finished saying all this, the ground under them split apart and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them, with their households and all Korah's men and all their possessions. They went down alive into the grave, with everything they owned; the earth closed over them, and they perished and were gone from the community.”*

The Israelites arrived at the desert of Zin and stayed at Kadish where Miriam died, Numbers 20v2 *“Now there was no water for the community, and the people gathered in opposition to Moses and Aaron.”* v6-8 *“Moses and Aaron went from the assembly to the entrance to the Tent of Meeting and fell facedown, and the glory of the LORD appeared to them. The LORD said to Moses, “Take the staff, and you and your brother Aaron gather the assembly together. Speak to that rock before their eyes and it will pour out its water. You will bring water out of the rock for the community so they and their livestock can drink.”* We see that Moses was instructed to speak to the rock, but he strikes the rock twice. V10-11, *“Listen, you rebels, must we bring you water out of this rock?”* Then Moses raised his arm and struck the rock twice with his staff. *Water gushed out.....*; Psalm 106v33 *“for they rebelled against the Spirit of God, and rash words came from Moses' lips.”* This is the reason why God did not allow Moses to enter the Land of Promise at this time.

Joshua was appointed as the successor to Moses. Numbers 27v18-20 *“So the LORD said to Moses, “Take Joshua son of Nun, a man in whom is the spirit, and lay your hand on him. Have him stand before Eleazar the priest and the entire assembly and commission him in their presence. Give him some of your authority so the whole Israelite community will obey him”*; Deuteronomy 34v9 *“Now Joshua son of Nun was filled with the spirit of wisdom because Moses had laid his hands on him. So the Israelites listened to him and did what the LORD had commanded Moses.”*

The wandering of Israel. Numbers 33v51-53. They arrived at the borders of the Promised Land again and Moses died on the top of Mount Pisgah, where God showed him the whole

land of Israel. Deuteronomy 34v1 *“Then Moses climbed Mount Nebo from the plains of Moab to the top of Pisgah, across from Jericho. There the LORD showed him the whole land--from Gilead to Dan.”* v5-6 *“And Moses the servant of the LORD died there in Moab, as the LORD had said. He buried him in Moab, in the valley opposite Beth Peor, but to this day no one knows where his grave is.”*

All the adults over 20 years who came out of Egypt, with the exception of Joshua, Caleb and Levites, died in the wilderness. God promised blessings for Joshua and the people. Joshua 1v5-9 *“No one will be able to stand up against you all the days of your life. As I was with Moses, so I will be with you; I will never leave you nor forsake you. “Be strong and courageous, because you will lead these people to inherit the land I swore to their forefathers to give them. Be strong and very courageous. Be careful to obey all the law my servant Moses gave you; do not turn from it to the right or to the left, that you may be successful wherever you go. Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful. Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous. Do not be terrified; do not be discouraged, for the LORD your God will be with you wherever you go.”*; Exodus 32v25-29; Deut.33v8-11;

Eleazar, son of Aaron succeeded him as Priest; Deut.10v6 *“Eleazar his son succeeded him as priest.”*; Eleazar died and was buried at Gibeah which had been allotted to his son Phinehas in the hill country of Ephraim. Joshua 24v33 *“And Eleazar son of Aaron died and was buried at Gibeah, which had been allotted to his son Phinehas in the hill country of Ephraim.”*

- 9.7 Two spies sent into Jericho - Rahab. Read Joshua 2v1 *“Then Joshua son of Nun secretly sent two spies from Shittim. “Go, look over the land,” he said, “especially Jericho.” So they went and entered the house of a prostitute named Rahab and stayed there.”*? Rahab (Heb. 11v31) was saved because she helped the two spies of the God of Israel

When the Israelites, under Joshua, wanted to cross the River Jordan it dried up to permit the crossing. Twelve stones were taken from the River for a Memorial. Joshua 4v4-7.

In accordance with the command of God through Moses to Joshua, the following cities were destroyed.

1) Jericho was destroyed (the first city), apart from Rahab and her family – Joshua 6v20. This removed the Caananites and other nations from the land promised to Abraham, so that Israel could live in it. - Joshua 6 and 7.

2) Ai, the first attack was unsuccessful due to Achan’s sin. Joshua 7v1 *“But the Israelites acted unfaithfully in regard to the devoted things; Achan son of Carmi, the son of Zimri, the son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, took some of them.”* Read v 20-21. The second attack on Ai was successful – Joshua 7v28 *“So Joshua burned Ai and made it a permanent heap of ruins, a desolate place to this day.”* The land of Canaan divided between the tribes. Two and a half tribes remain East of Jordan. Read Joshua chapters 14 – 21.

A tabernacle was set up at Shiloh – Joshua 18v1. Israel were ruled by Judges for approximately four hundred years with God as their King – until the time of Saul. 1 Samuel 8v10 *“And the LORD told him: “Listen to all that the people are saying to you; it is not you they have rejected, **but they have rejected me as their king.**”*

Due to Israel’s wickedness God caused them to be oppressed by the surrounding nations, particularly the Philistines. Judges 3v1 *“These are the nations the LORD left to test all those Israelites who had not experienced any of the wars in Canaan.”* See also verses 2 – 11.

Judges such as Deborah, Barak, Gideon, Jephthah, Samson and others were raised up by God to deliver Israel when the Israelites repented and obeyed God.

The last judge was Samuel. Israel then asked for a king. 1Samuel 8v4-5.

God through Samuel pleaded with the people but they refused to obey His voice and insist on a king. 1Samuel 8v19 *"But the people refused to listen to Samuel. "No!" they said. "We want a king over us."*

Questions

- 180 God Gave Israel a law. What was it called?
- 181 Why did God tell Israel to drive out the people of Canaan?
- a) because they were tribal
 - b) so that they could possess the land, the people were wicked
 - c) their skin was a different colour
- 182 What lesson can we learn from this command?
- 183 What were the blessings God promised to Israel if they were obedient?
- 184 What would be their punishment for disobedience?
- 185 What was the purpose of sacrifice under the Law of Moses?
- 186 What was the purpose of the Tabernacle and the High Priest?
- 187 Why is the Law of Moses called the Old Covenant?
- a) when Jesus died the Old Covenant finished
 - b) it is from Adam's time
 - c) it was lost on the mountain
- 188 Do we keep the Law of Moses now?
- 189 When did it come to an end?
- 190 What is the New Covenant?
- 191 The promise to Abraham was made 430 years before the Law of Moses - Why is it called the New Covenant?
- 192 How often did the High Priest go into the Most Holy Place?
- 193 Was this a type or pattern of Christ?
- 194 What comparison between the High Priest and Christ does the writer draw in Hebrews ch. 9?
- 195 Who was the mediator between God and man under the Old Covenant?
- a) Jesus
 - b) Aaron
 - c) Moses
- 196 Who is the Mediator between God and man under the New Covenant?
- 197 How can we seek forgiveness of sins?
- a) by going to church
 - b) through prayer
 - c) visiting the Priest
- 198 When Israel approached the land of Canaan for the FIRST time, how many spies did they send out?
- 199 How long did they search?

- a) 40 days
 - b) 10 days
 - c) 6 days
- 200 What report did they bring back?
- 201 Who brought back a good report?
- a) the 12 spies
 - b) Joshua
 - c) Caleb
- 202 How did God punish Israel?
- 203 Why was Moses not allowed to enter the Promised Land?
- a) the Levites rebelled against Moses
 - b) he spoke to God at the burning bush
 - c) he hit the rock twice and spoke rashly
- 204 Did any adults who came out of Egypt enter Canaan?
- 205 How many spies were sent out when Israel re-approached the land of Canaan?
- 206 Who led Israel into the Promised Land?
- 207 What River did they have to cross?
- a) Euphrates
 - b) Jordan
 - c) Nile
- 208 What did they take from the River?
- 209 What was the first city taken and how was it overcome?
- 210 Who was saved and why?
- 211 Name the second city taken
- a) Ai
 - b) Hazor
 - c) Beersheba
- 212 How was the land divided?
- 213 What were Israel's leaders called at this time?
- 214 Who was the last Judge?
- a) Gideon
 - b) Samuel
 - c) Samson
- 215 Who was their King at the time of the Judges?
- a) Saul
 - b) David
 - c) God

- 216 What change of leadership did Israel ask for?
- 217 How did Israel disobey God?
- 218 How did God punish the Israelites?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 10

10.0 KINGS OF ISRAEL - 1100-600BC

When Israel asked Samuel for a king, God told the prophet that they were not rejecting him as a leader, but were rejecting Him (God) as their King: *"it is not you they have rejected, but they have rejected me as their king."* - 1Samuel 8v7. Read 1Samuel 8v1-7; 10v17-19.

- 10.1 Their first king was SAUL - head and shoulders above the people - first people's king. - 1Samuel 10v23 *"They ran and brought him out, and as he stood among the people he was a head taller than any of the others."*

Saul's disobedience and punishment. 1Samuel 13v8-14; 1Samuel 15v3: *"Now go, attack the Amalekites and totally destroy everything that belongs to them. Do not spare them; put to death men and women, children and infants, cattle and sheep, camels and donkeys."* Read also verses 8-9, 18-19. But Samuel replied, *"Does the LORD delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the LORD? To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of rams. For rebellion is like the sin of divination, and arrogance like the evil of idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the LORD, he has rejected you as king."* - v22-23.

- 10.2 The second king was DAVID "a man His (God's) own heart"; 1Samuel 13:14 *"But now your kingdom will not endure; the LORD has sought out a man after his own heart and appointed him leader of his people..."* - not perfect but a man of faith who loved God and His Word and was truly repentant of his sins. 2Samuel 12v13 *"Then David said to Nathan, "I have sinned against the LORD." Nathan replied, "The LORD has taken away your sin. You are not going to die."*

- 10.2.1 God's COVENANT WITH DAVID - that he would have a Son (Jesus) who would sit on his throne for ever. 2Samuel 7v12-19 *"When your days are over and you rest with your fathers, I will raise up your offspring to succeed you, who will come from your own body, and I will establish his kingdom. He is the one who will build a house for my Name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever. I will be his father, and he will be my son. When he does wrong, I will punish him with the rod of men, with floggings inflicted by men. But my love will never be taken away from him, as I took it away from Saul, whom I removed from before you. Your house and your kingdom will endure forever before me; your throne will be established forever." Nathan reported to David all the words of this entire revelation. Then King David went in and sat before the LORD, and he said: "Who am I, O Sovereign LORD, and what is my family, that you have brought me this far? And as if this were not enough in your sight, O Sovereign LORD, you have also spoken about the future of the house of your servant. Is this your usual way of dealing with man, O Sovereign LORD?"* 2Samuel 23v1-5 –

These are the last words of David: *"The oracle of David son of Jesse, the oracle of the man exalted by the Most High, the man anointed by the God of Jacob, Israel's singer of songs: "The Spirit of the LORD spoke through me; is word was on my tongue. The God of Israel spoke, the Rock of Israel said to me: 'When one rules over men in righteousness, when he*

rules in the fear of God, he is like the light of morning at sunrise on a cloudless morning, like the brightness after rain that brings the grass from the earth.’ “Is not my house right with God? Has he not made with me an everlasting covenant, arranged and secured in every part? Will he not bring to fruition my salvation and grant me my every desire?” Luke 1v32: “He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David.” Read also: Acts 13v33-37; Acts 2v29-30; Revelation 22v16.

- 10.3 SOLOMON - commenced well and asked for wisdom. 1Kings 3v5-15 “At Gibeon the LORD appeared to Solomon during the night in a dream, and God said, “Ask for whatever you want me to give you.” “So give your servant a discerning heart to govern your people and to distinguish between right and wrong. For who is able to govern this great people of yours?” The Lord was pleased that Solomon had asked for this. So God said to him, “Since you have asked for this and not for long life or wealth for yourself, nor have asked for the death of your enemies but for discernment in administering justice, I will do what you have asked. I will give you a wise and discerning heart, so that there will never have been anyone like you, nor will there ever be....”. He had a peaceful reign. 1Kings 4v25 “During Solomon's lifetime Judah and Israel, from Dan to Beersheba, lived in safety, each man under his own vine and fig tree.”. He built a temple for God - 1Kings 6v1-2 “In the four hundred and eightieth year after the Israelites had come out of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month of Ziv, the second month, he began to build the temple of the LORD.....” ; 2Chronicles 3. He married wives from the idol worshipping nations around Israel. 1Kings 11v1 “King Solomon, however, loved many foreign women besides Pharaoh's daughter--Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians and Hittites.” The lesson for us is: 1Corinthians 7v39 “A woman is bound to her husband as long as he lives.”; 2Corinthians 6v14-15 “Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever?”; 1Kings 11v1-13.
- 10.4 The Kingdom of Israel divided - 1Kings 12v20 “When all the Israelites heard that Jeroboam had returned, they sent and called him to the assembly and made him king over all Israel. Only the tribe of Judah remained loyal to the house of David.”.
- 10.5 The Kingdom of Israel (10 tribes). King Jeroboam reigned over Israel whose capital was Samaria - 1Kings 12v20-28. **All the kings of Israel were wicked and they lead Israel astray.** The Prophets of God warned Israel to turn from their wickedness. The last King of Israel was Hoshea - 2Kings 17v5-6 “The king of Assyria invaded the entire land, marched against Samaria and laid siege to it for three years. In the ninth year of Hoshea, the king of Assyria captured Samaria and deported the Israelites to Assyria. He settled them in Halah, in Gozan on the Habor River and in the towns of the Medes.”. Finally they were taken captive by the Assyrians because of their disobedience and never returned.
- 10.5.1 In both kingdoms the prophets of God were sent to turn the people away from their wickedness to serve God. In Israel the prophets Elijah and Elisha performed great miracles and showed that the idols were nothing. 1 Kings chs.17 and 18;
- 10.6 The Kingdom of Judah (2 tribes - Judah and Benjamin). King Rehoboam reigned over Judah with Jerusalem as its capital. 1 Kings 14:21 “Rehoboam son of Solomon was king in Judah. He was forty-one years old when he became king, and he reigned seventeen years in Jerusalem, the city the LORD had chosen out of all the tribes of Israel in which to put his Name. His mother's name was Naamah; she was an Ammonite.” 1Kings 12v1-20. There are some good kings such as Hezekiah and Josiah - 2Chronicles 29v1-2 “Hezekiah was twenty-five years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem twenty-nine years. His mother's name was Abijah daughter of Zechariah. He did what was right in the eyes of the LORD, just as his father David had done.” 2Kings 22v2 “He did what was right in the eyes of

the LORD and walked in all the ways of his father David, not turning aside to the right or to the left.”. Although in the main they were mostly bad kings and were constantly warned by the prophets.

Finally, Zedekiah the last king of Judah was taken captive with the people because of their wickedness, by Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon. *“Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem eleven years. He did evil in the eyes of the LORD his God and did not humble himself before Jeremiah the prophet, who spoke the word of the LORD. He also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him take an oath in God's name. He became stiff-necked and hardened his heart and would not turn to the LORD, the God of Israel. Furthermore, all the leaders of the priests and the people became more and more unfaithful, following all the detestable practices of the nations and defiling the temple of the LORD, which he had consecrated in Jerusalem..... they mocked God's messengers, despised his words and scoffed at his prophets until the wrath of the LORD was aroused against his people and there was no remedy. He brought up against them the king of the Babylonians, who killed their young men with the sword in the sanctuary, and spared neither young man nor young woman, old man or aged. God handed all of them over to Nebuchadnezzar.”* 2Chronicles 36v11-17; Ezekiel 21v25-27 *“O profane and wicked prince of Israel, whose day has come, whose time of punishment has reached its climax, this is what the Sovereign LORD says: Take off the turban, remove the crown. It will not be as it was: The lowly will be exalted and the exalted will be brought low. A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it.”*. They remained in captivity in Babylon for seventy years. Daniel was aware of this period as recorded by Jeremiah 29v10 *“This is what the LORD says: “When seventy years are completed for Babylon, I will come to you and fulfill my gracious promise to bring you back to this place.”*

Some people returned to the land of Israel under the instruction by decree of Cyrus the Persian - 2 Chronicles 36v22-23 *“In the first year of Cyrus king of Persia, in order to fulfill the word of the LORD spoken by Jeremiah, the LORD moved the heart of Cyrus king of Persia to make a proclamation throughout his realm and to put it in writing: “This is what Cyrus king of Persia says: “The LORD, the God of heaven, has given me all the kingdoms of the earth and he has appointed me to build a temple for him at Jerusalem in Judah. Anyone of his people among you--may the LORD his God be with him, and let him go up.”* and they were led back by Ezra and Nehemiah. Ezra 1v2-3; Nehemiah 1. The temple and city of Jerusalem was rebuilt. They remained as a ‘subject’ nation under the Medes and Persians, then under the Greeks and finally under Rome at the time when Christ was born. Jerusalem finally was overthrown by the Roman Emperor Titus in AD 70 and the Jews were scattered throughout the world - Luke 21 v20-24. There were no good Kings in Israel

- 10.6.1 The Jewish people became a proverb, a taunt, a byword. “The wandering Jew” was to be found in every nation under heaven, herded into ghettos, deprived of normal civil rights and often made the scapegoat for the faults and failings of the peoples among whom they lived. During the second World War six million Jews perished in Europe alone. Read Leviticus 26v26-39.
- 10.7 The Kingdom not to be re-established until Christ returns. Ezekiel 21v25-27: *“O profane and wicked prince of Israel, whose day has come, whose time of punishment has reached its climax, this is what the Sovereign LORD says: Take off the turban, remove the crown. It will not be as it was: The lowly will be exalted and the exalted will be brought low. A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it...”* in fulfilment of the promises to Abraham and David and the Gospel message. Read also: Amos 9v11; Luke 1v32; 19v11; Acts 1v6-11 *“.....“Men of Galilee,” they said, “why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into*

heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”; Ezekiel 37v22; Zechariah 8v22-23; Micah 4v6-8.

10.8 Prior to the return of Christ the Jews will be regathered and form a nation in Israel - Ezekiel 37.

10.8.1 In 1948, when Britain gave up the Mandate for Palestine, it looked for a moment as if the far more numerous Arab nations would sweep the little nation of Israel into the sea; but in three successive wars Israel has been victorious over her enemies. The speed of her conquest in the ‘6 day war’ of 1967 astonished the nations, but that is because they did not recognize the ‘signs of the times’ in which they were living.

In Ezekiel ch.37 that prophet records a vision which he was shown by God of the ultimate regathering of his people. He was shown a valley full of dry bones and he was told that that would represent the condition of his people for a long period – hopeless, helpless and nationally dead. Then he saw the spirit of God exerted to cause these bones to come together ‘bone to his bone’, to clothe them with sinews and flesh, and to cause the bodies to stand up as a mighty nation: Ezekiel 37v11-14 *“Then he said to me: “Son of man, **these bones are the whole house of Israel**. They say, ‘Our bones are dried up and our hope is gone; we are cut off.’ Therefore prophesy and say to them: ‘This is what the Sovereign LORD says: O my people, I am going to open your graves and bring you up from them; I will bring you back to the land of Israel. Then you, my people, will know that I am the LORD, when I open your graves and bring you up from them. I will put my Spirit in you and you will live, and I will settle you in your own land. Then you will know that I the LORD have spoken, and I have done it, declares the LORD.”* Also we read in Luke 21v24 how Israel will fall and be taken prisoner by other nations: *“They will fall by the sword and will be taken as prisoners to all the nations. Jerusalem will be trampled on by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.”*

Questions

- 219 Who did Israel reject when they asked Samuel for a king?
- 220 Who was the first king of Israel and what kind of man was he?
- 221 Why was he later rejected by God?
- a) he was disobedient to God
 - b) he tried to kill David
 - c) he married foreign women
- 222 Who was the second king of Israel and what kind of man was he?
- 223 Did God make a covenant with David?
- 224 Who was the son promised? Give quotation.
- 225 Has this promise been fulfilled?
- 226 When will the promise be fulfilled?
- 227 Who was the next king after David?
- a) Ahab
 - b) Jeroboam
 - c) Solomon
- 228 Did he commence well and what did he ask from God?
- 229 How was he led astray? Is there a lesson for us?
- 230 Was Solomon's reign a peaceful one and what special work did he complete?
- 231 Who was his son and what happened in his reign?
- 232 How were the tribes divided?
- 233 Who ruled over Israel?
- a) the Prophets
 - b) the Judges
 - c) Jeroboam
- 234 Who did God use to warn Israel to turn from their wicked ways?
- 235 Were there any good kings of Israel?
- a) yes – most were good
 - b) only two were good
 - c) no Kings were good
- 236 Who was the last king of Israel? What happened during his reign?
- 237 Who was the king of Judah when the tribes were divided?
- a) Jeroboam
 - b) Rehoboam
 - c) Asa
- 238 Were there any good kings of Judah? If so, name one.
- 239 What special warning was given by the prophet Ezekiel to Judah? Give quotation.

- 240 Who was the last king of Judah and what happened during his reign?
- a) Zedekiah – taken captive to Babylon
 - b) Hoshea – taken captive to Assyria
 - c) Hezekiah – taken captive to Babylon
- 241 How long were they in captivity?
- 242 Who issued a decree permitting Judah to return to Jerusalem?
- 243 Who were the two leaders who led them on their return and what work did they accomplish?
- 244 Did they ever have a king again?
- 245 After the overthrow of Medo-Persia, by which nation was the land of Israel controlled?
- a) Babylon
 - b) Rome
 - c) Greece
- 246 How and by whom was Jerusalem finally overthrown?
- 247 Will God's Kingdom ever be re-established?
- a) it is established now
 - b) yes, when Jesus returns
 - c) it will be established in heaven
- 248** Is the regathering of Israel as a nation a fulfillment of Prophecy.

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 11

11.0 NEW TESTAMENT TIMES

CHRIST'S BIRTH AND NATURE - Jesus is the Son of God, a man, not God himself. In the physical sense, Jesus was no different from other men. He suffered, he was weary, he rejoiced, he wept. He was MORTAL having our mortal/human nature, subject to death. Romans 1v2-3 *"God --regarding his Son (Jesus Christ) , who as to his human nature was a descendant of David....."* See also Hebrews 2v11-18; 2 Corinthians 5v21; Galatians 4v4; Isaiah 53v3-4 and quoted by Matthew in 8v17; John 4v6 and John 11v35.

Being born of Mary he fulfilled the requirements of Genesis 3v15 that he should be the *"seed of the woman"*. He was not Joseph's son as has sometimes been contended. Luke 1v34-35; Matthew 1v18 and 24-25.

Through the miracle of his birth, Jesus was both Son of God and Son of Man. John 3v14 – 18 *"Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert, so the Son of Man must be lifted up..... For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him. Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son."*

The One and Only Christ

(Study)

The first expression by which the Son is shown to be different from the Father is that the Father sent him, as in John 1v14 and 3v16. Next He called him His own, as in Romans 8v32. He was conceived by the Holy Spirit - Luke 1v35 and Matthew 1v20. he was made of a woman - Galatians 4v4. He was made of the seed of David (Romans 1v3. He was chosen - 1 Peter 1v20. he was promised - Genesis 3v15 and Romans 1v1-2. He was chosen by God - 1 Peter 2v6. He was sealed by the Father - John 6v27. He was given to us by God - Acts 10v38. He was raised up by God from death - Acts 2v24. He was glorified by God - Acts 3v13. He was exalted by God - Acts 2v33. He was given life by God - John 5v26. God gave him honour and glory - 1 Peter 1v21. God gave him the Holy Spirit - John 3v34. God gave him power - Matthew 28v18. God gave him a name above every name - Philippians 2v9. God has ordained him to be Judge of living and dead - Acts 10v42. God has made him the corner stone - 1 Peter 2v6. God has made him to us wisdom and righteousness - 1Corinthians 1v30.

11.1 Jesus had no existence before his birth, although God's purpose from the very beginning was to bring His Son into being, and this Divine purpose is often referred to. For example, - 1 Peter 1v20-21 *"He was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake. Through him you believe in God, who raised him from the dead and glorified him, and so your faith and hope are in God."*

11.2 Christ's Work This was expressed in the simplest possible terms. This was to do God's will. John 5v30 *"By myself I can do nothing; I judge only as I hear, and my judgment is just, for I seek not to please myself but him who sent me."* Also: Luke 2v49; John 4v34; Hebrews

10v7. In all respects Christ's obedience to God was perfect and complete. He was without sin, the only perfectly righteous member of the human race ever to have lived. John 8v46 *"Can any of you prove me guilty of sin? If I am telling the truth, why don't you believe me?"*; 1 Peter 2v22. There was nothing 'automatic' about this obedience. He was tempted, he had to overcome this temptation. It was a battle against sin. Because **Christ had our nature he COULD have sinned**, but we know that he did not. Hebrew 4v15 *"For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are--yet was without sin."*

- 11.3 Christ's Death By his sinless life, Jesus was able, when the time came, to offer a perfect sacrifice for sin – Hebrews 9v22 *"without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness."* - It had been laid down in Eden and was elaborated in the Law of Moses. The superiority of Christ's sacrifice lay in the fact that whereas the animals offered had to be physically without blemish, Jesus was morally perfect. He conquered sin, destroyed it in himself. Sin was condemned in Adam's nature, the same nature which had transgressed. This is what is meant by the statement that Jesus *"might destroy him who holds the power of death, that is, the devil--.."* Hebrews 2v14. It is sin which has the power of death. Exodus 12v3-13; Leviticus 17v11; Hebrews 10v1-5; Hebrews 9 v 14 & 22-23. Christ fulfilled Genesis 3v15 – see Section 5. He was truly the representative of humanity, taking our burden of sin upon himself.
- 11.4 The New Testament is the record of the development of God's purpose during the first century. Hebrews 6v13-20. The Gospel Records, the first four books, all tell us of Jesus the founder of Christianity. We learn of the fulfillment of Old Testament prophecies concerning the coming of Jesus, his work, life, death and resurrection.
- 11.5 The Acts of the Apostles, the next book, tells how they spread the Gospel, basing their teaching on the fact of the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Acts 2v22-24 *"Men of Israel, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth was a man accredited by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know. This man was handed over to you by God's set purpose and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, put him to death by nailing him to the cross. But God raised him from the dead, freeing him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for death to keep its hold on him."* Acts 3v12-15; Acts 4v4; Acts 6v7; Acts 12v24; Acts 17v30-31.
- 11.6 The Epistles which make up the rest of the New Testament, with the exception of the last book, are letters from the apostles to various groups of believers or individuals teaching doctrine and practice, giving advice, exhorting and encouraging to greater efforts to please God. 1 Timothy 1v1-2 *"Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the command of God our Savior and of Christ Jesus our hope, To Timothy my true son in the faith:"* 1 Corinthians 1v2 *"To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus and called to be holy, together with all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ--their Lord and ours:"*
- 11.7 The Revelation the last book, is a message given by Jesus to John in visions, telling him of the events which would happen from then until the return of Jesus to the earth to set up God's Kingdom and beyond. Revelation 1v1 *"The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave him to show his servants what must soon take place. He made it known by sending his angel to his servant John..."* Revelation 22v12.
- 11.8 The First Century was a vital period in God's plan. Jesus had by his perfect life, death and resurrection, confirmed the Promises made to Abraham. This established the New Covenant (New Testament). This means:
- i) the sacrifices under the Law of Moses were no longer to be observed. Jesus was the perfect sacrifice, and had fulfilled the law. Colossians 2v14; *"..having cancelled the*

written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross.” Hebrews 9v11-12

- ii) the Gentiles [us] were now to have the opportunity through baptism of becoming related to Jesus and the promises to Abraham. Galatians 3v27-29 *“...for all of you who were baptised into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.”*

These two factors were a source of conflict even in the minds of some who were responsible for the preaching of the Gospel. It was difficult for the Jews to accept these momentous changes in God's dealing with mankind, yet they were part of God's plan long since declared in the Old Testament Scriptures. Acts 10v45; Acts 11v1-2 *“The apostles and the brothers throughout Judea heard that the Gentiles also had received the word of God. So when Peter went up to Jerusalem, the circumcised believers criticized him.”* Acts 13v44-48; Acts 15v1-18.

11.9 **THE MISSION OF JESUS**

Jesus was baptised by John the Baptist in the river Jordan as an example for his followers: Matthew 3v13-17 *“Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to be baptised by John. But John tried to deter him, saying, “I need to be baptised by you, and do you come to me?” Jesus replied, “Let it be so now; it is proper for us to do this to fulfill all righteousness.” Then John consented. As soon as Jesus was baptised, he went up out of the water. At that moment heaven was opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and lighting on him. And a voice from heaven said, “This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased.”*

- 11.10 Jesus was given the Power of the Holy Spirit and declared to be God's beloved Son. Mark 1v9-11 *“At that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee and was baptised by John in the Jordan. As Jesus was coming up out of the water, he saw heaven being torn open and the Spirit descending on him like a dove. And a voice came from heaven: “You are my Son, whom I love; with you I am well pleased.”*

- 11.11 Jesus was submitted to a period of severe testing but due to his obedience to God and because God was his Father and he had a very thorough knowledge of the Old Testament Scriptures, he was able to resist all the temptations with *“It is written”*. Matthew 4v1-11 *“The tempter came to him and said, “If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to become bread.” Jesus answered, “It is written: `Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.”*

- 11.12 Jesus Preached the Gospel or good news of the Kingdom of God to his fellow Jews, God's chosen people. Mark 1v14 *“After John was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the good news of God.”* Matthew 4v23.

- 11.13 Jesus went about Doing Good to those in need to help and we read in several places that *“He had compassion on the multitude.”* Acts 10v38; Matthew 20v34; Matthew 9v36.

- 11.14 Jesus taught the people the Truth concerning God and His purpose with mankind centred in him. He spoke of his forthcoming death and resurrection and of the Kingdom of God to be established on this earth. Mark 8v31 *“He then began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders, chief priests and teachers of the law, and that he must be killed and after three days rise again.”*

- 11.15 Jesus spoke of how we should behave in order to please God. Matthew chapters 5-7 – *“...let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your Father in heaven.”*
John 14v15 *“If you love me, you will obey what I command.”*

- 11.16 Jesus himself set us the perfect example to follow - John 13v15 *"I have set you an example that you should do as I have done for you."* Philipians 2v5 *"Your attitude should be the same as that of Christ Jesus:"*

From among those who followed him Jesus chose twelve men to be his Apostles and prepared them to continue his work. He sent them to preach the Good News of God's coming Kingdom and gave them limited power to do miracles. Matthew 10v1-7 *"He (Jesus) called his twelve disciples to him and gave them authority to drive out evil spirits and to heal every disease and sickness."* He promised them that after his departure to heaven the full power of the Holy Spirit would come upon them to help and guide them in the difficult work. This Gift of the Holy Spirit would end at the conclusion of the first century/beginning of the second. 1 Corinthians 13v8 *"Love never fails. But where there are prophecies, they will cease; where there are tongues, they will be stilled; where there is knowledge, it will pass away."* John 14v26; John 16v7; Acts 2v1-13 *"All of them were filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other tongues as the Spirit enabled them. Utterly amazed, they asked: "Are not all these men who are speaking Galileans? Then how is it that each of us hears them in his own native language? Parthians, Medes and Elamites; residents of Mesopotamia, Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya near Cyrene; visitors from Rome (both Jews and converts to Judaism); Cretans and Arabs--we hear them declaring the wonders of God in our own tongues!"*

Jesus' ministry was remarkable in that so few of the Jews believed that he was the Prophet promised them by Moses, and they rejected him as their Saviour. After his resurrection, he instructed his apostles to go into all the world to preach the Gospel. Mark 16v15-16 *"He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned."* Acts 3v13-22; Deuteronomy 18v18; Acts 7v37; Acts 13v46; Acts 1v8.

- 11.17 The Call of the Gospel - At first the Gospel was taught only to the Jews. A man named Cornelius a centurion in the Italian Regiment had a vision. Cornelius was a Gentile and all his family were God-fearing people. He was told by an angel of God to send men to Joppa to bring back a man called Peter. God gave Peter a special vision demonstrating His plan to call the Gentiles. Peter fell into a trance. Acts ch.10v11-14 *"He saw heaven opened and something like a large sheet being let down to earth by its four corners. It contained all kinds of four-footed animals, as well as reptiles of the earth and birds of the air. Then a voice told him, "Get up, Peter. Kill and eat." "Surely not, Lord!" Peter replied. "I have never eaten anything impure or unclean." v15 "The voice spoke to him a second time, "Do not call anything impure that God has made clean."* This happened three times, then the sheet was taken back into heaven. Acts 10v34-45 - *"Then Peter began to speak: "I now realize how true it is that God does not show favoritism but accepts men from every nation who fear him and do what is right." He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that he is the one whom God appointed as judge of the living and the dead. All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name." While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit came on all who heard the message. The circumcised believers who had come with Peter were astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out even on the Gentiles."* Read all of Acts chapter 10. Later Paul became the Apostle to the Gentiles whilst Peter continued his work amongst the Jews. Gal 2v7-9 *"On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the task of preaching the gospel to the Gentiles, just as Peter had been to the Jews. For God, who was at work in the ministry of Peter as an apostle to the Jews, was also at work in my ministry as an apostle to the Gentiles. James, Peter and John, those reputed to be pillars, gave me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship when they recognized the grace given to me. They agreed that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews."*

- 11.18 Paul, the Apostle to the Gentiles The preaching of the Gospel by the apostles based on the death and resurrection of Jesus was strongly opposed by the Jews and resulted in the persecution of the followers of Christ. Acts 4v16-20 *"What are we going to do with these men?" they asked. "Everybody living in Jerusalem knows they have done an outstanding miracle, and we cannot deny it....."*; Acts 12v1-3. One of the chief persecutors was SAUL OF TARSUS a Jew who had authority at this time. Jesus appeared to Saul on the road to Damascus and this was the turning point of Saul's life. Thereafter he dedicated himself to preaching the Gospel as the Apostle to the Gentiles. Acts 9v15 *"But the Lord said to Ananias, "Go! This man is my chosen instrument to carry my name before the Gentiles and their kings and before the people of Israel."*; Romans 11v13 *"I am talking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am the apostle to the Gentiles, I make much of my ministry in the hope that I may somehow arouse my own people to envy and save some of them."* He said in 1 Corinthians 11v1 *"Follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ."*

He made three missionary journeys and with others established churches or ECCLESIAS in the cities north and west of Israel, examples of which are Corinth, Galatia, Ephesus, Philippi and Rome. Acts chapters 13 and 14; 16 to 20. he wrote letters or epistles to these ecclesias to assist them in their work. These letters are also a guide for us in doctrine and conduct.

NOTE: ECCLESIA – this word comes from the Greek and means literally *"that which is called out"*. It is used to describe an assembly of people who have accepted the invitation to come out and be separate.

The Philippian Jailer asked Paul what he should do to be saved. Acts 16v30-34 - *"He then brought them out and asked, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?" They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved--you and your household." Then they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house. At that hour of the night the jailer took them and washed their wounds; then immediately he and all his family were baptised. The jailer brought them into his house and set a meal before them; he was filled with joy because he had come to believe in God--he and his whole family."*

Philip said to the Ethiopian, Acts 8v27-38 *"....on his way he met an Ethiopian eunuch, an important official in charge of all the treasury of Candace, queen of the Ethiopians. This man had gone to Jerusalem to worship, and on his way home was sitting in his chariot reading the book of Isaiah the prophet. The Spirit told Philip, "Go to that chariot and stay near it." Then Philip ran up to the chariot and heard the man reading Isaiah the prophet. "Do you understand what you are reading?" Philip asked. "How can I," he said, "unless someone explains it to me?" So he invited Philip to come up and sit with him. The eunuch was reading this passage of Scripture: "He was led like a sheep to the slaughter, and as a lamb before the shearer is silent, so he did not open his mouth. In his humiliation he was deprived of justice. Who can speak of his descendants? For his life was taken from the earth." The eunuch asked Philip, "Tell me, please, who is the prophet talking about, himself or someone else?" Then Philip began with that very passage of Scripture and told him the good news about Jesus. As they traveled along the road, they came to some water and the eunuch said, "Look, here is water. Why shouldn't I be baptised?" And he gave orders to stop the chariot. Then both Philip and the eunuch went down into the water and Philip baptised him."*

Note: Paul was not baptised until after his conversion. Acts 9v18 *"Immediately, something like scales fell from Saul's eyes, and he could see again. He got up and was baptised..."*

- 11.19 **BAPTISM – ESSENTIAL FOR SALVATION:** Baptism was commanded by Jesus and is essential to salvation. It is an act of faith by which the believer demonstrates his conviction that Jesus died, was raised and rewarded with immortality. It is also an act of obedience to God's command by which we identify ourselves with Jesus. Mark 16v16 *"Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned."*

Baptism is an act of faith and obedience which is necessary for salvation: “*Jesus answered, “I tell you the truth, no-one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit.”* - John 3v5;; Acts 10v47; Acts 8v12; 1Peter 3v21; Galatians 3v27 and v19.

Remembering Christ the First Day of the Week

(Study)

After baptism, Greek word ‘baptizo’ meaning to completely wash and immerse in a liquid (water), we should regularly obey Christ’s command to break bread and drink wine in memory of his sacrifice. “*Do this in remembrance of me*”, Jesus commanded (Luke 22v19). It was his wish that his followers should regularly do this until his second coming, when Jesus will share the bread and wine with disciples again (1Corinthians 11v26; Luke 22v16-18).

The bread represents Christ’s body which was offered on the cross, and the wine his blood (1Corinthians 11v23-27). The early believers kept the ‘breaking of bread’ regularly - see Acts 2v42 and v46-47. Look at Acts 20v7 “*On the first day of the week we came together to break bread.....*” If we truly love Christ, we will obey his commands - John 15v14.

BAPTISM

(Study)

“*Without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.*” - Hebrews 11v6 - A child is not capable of this. Sprinkling a few drops of water in no way represents a true burial, for a sprinkling of earth would never bury a man. It makes nonsense the Word of God which says “*We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death.*” Here we see baptism as a type of burial. Romans 6v4. It is a “*putting to death or burying*” of the old way of life that we might begin a new one through knowledge. The rising out of the water is a type of the rising to a new way of life, the resurrection foreshadowed. - Romans 6v5 “*If we have been united with him like this in his death, we will certainly also be united with him in his resurrection. For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin--because anyone who has died has been freed from sin.*” So here we see that “*burial*” is a destruction by crucifixion - in type. The “*old man of the flesh*” is crucified and buried is “*the old way of life*” which we no longer serve. We rise from the water which represents the grave in which we have been buried, as “*a new creation*” (2Corinthians 5v17) that we henceforth “*may live a new life.*” - Romans 6v4.

We read in Ephesians 4v4-6 “*There is one body and one Spirit--just as you were called to one hope when you were called -- one Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all.*” Only one baptism. This is after knowing the True Gospel from the Bible, therefore you become responsible to God’s law. Any baptisms before knowing the True Gospel are null and void. It is just like someone going into the water and coming out again! Not so when one is baptised after learning and believing what God requires of a person.

When we read in Mark 16v16 “*Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.*” So again we see that a person has to ‘believe’ God’s law as outlined in the Bible.

After a person believes and is baptised, of course they have to OBEY God and Christ’s commandments - 1John 5v3-5 “*This is love for God: to obey his commands. And his commands are not burdensome, for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith. Who is it that overcomes the world? Only he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.*”

11.20 Total immersion is essential: “*And he gave orders to stop the chariot. Then both Philip and the*

eunuch went down into the water and Philip baptised him." - Acts 8v36-38; Romans 6v3-5.

- 11.21 A rising to newness of life - Romans 6v3-4 *"Or don't you know that all of us who were baptised into Christ Jesus were baptised into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life."*; Colossians 3v1-3 *"Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things. For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God."*; Romans 12v2. Compare 2Kings 5 - Naaman is made clean of his leprosy which was a symbol of death - John 15v14; James 2v17.

To Keep Separate

(Study)

After baptism we must *"come out from them and be separate"* from any, like the churches of Christendom, who do not teach the full truth. It is a command of God to his sons and daughters - 2Corinthians 6v17-18. Our sins have been *"washed away"* by baptism into Christ - because we have *"clothed ourselves with"* Christ as a garment of salvation, and as a *'robe of righteousness'* Isaiah 61v10, that we might be forgiven for his sake. This was typified by the clothing of Adam and Eve with animal skins - Genesis 3v21 and Revelation 13v8. If therefore we associate ourselves with those who teach a false doctrine - we are not keeping our garments clean in the figurative sense. -. We must keep separate and state why we are keeping separate with the hope of saving others. *"Blessed is he who stays awake and keeps his clothes with him, so that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed."* - Revelation 16v15. Genesis 3v7-8. Fellowship only with those of who are believers and follow God and Christ's commandments.

- 11.22 Continuance In well doing – while belief and baptism are an essential beginning, these alone will not give us salvation. We must obey God's commandments. Matthew 7v21 *"Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven."*: Luke 14v27; Luke 9v23; Romans 2v7.

Why should Suffering, Pain and Hardship happen to Me?

(Study)

Jesus said - There are two gates. One is wide and broad which leads to destruction, and many go in that way. But the other is strait, or confined and narrow, which leads to life, and few people find it, and still fewer people want it. Matthew 7v13-14. But WHY is this? It is because *"We must go through many hardships to enter the Kingdom of God"*- Acts 14v22. Again WHY is this? We learn from Israel in the wilderness who were being led by God (in the pillar of cloud) to the promised land - which was to become the kingdom of God under King David and Solomon (1Chronicles 28v5) and which was a type or pattern of our probation in that *"small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it."* So it was with Israel God was to *"humble and to test you (Israel) so that in the end it might go well with you."* Deuteronomy 8v16. They needed **discipline** (from which comes the word - disciple) for they were to become, says God to Israel in Exodus 19v5-6 *"Now if you obey me fully and keep my covenant, then out of all nations you will be my treasured possession. Although the whole earth is mine, you will be for me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation."* The prophet Malachi wrote, 3v17 *"They will be mine," says the LORD Almighty, "in the day when I make up my treasured possession."* Exactly the same thing is said of us who follow Christ (as they followed Moses, God's servant). 1Peter 2v9 *"But you (Israel after the spirit) are a chosen people, a royal (kingly) priesthood, a holy nation, a people belonging to God, that you may declare the praises of him who called you out of darkness (like Egypt) into his wonderful light."*

Just as they were led by Moses - so we are led by Christ - God's Son. BUT WHY? It is to shape our characters. Jesus said in John 15v1-6 – *"I am the true vine, and my Father is the gardener. He*

(God) cuts off every branch in me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit he prunes so that it will be even more fruitful. (Pruning is cutting – moulding our characters – which is painful but very necessary, if we are to have that wonderful prize of eternal life. Hebrews 12v10-11 *“Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.”*

CHRIST IS OUR EXAMPLE. He said in John 14v6, *“I am the Way”*. It is further written of Jesus in Hebrews 5v8 - *“Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him...”*

SO WHY ARE WE SUFFERING? It is to learn obedience - like Jesus. Furthermore it is written of Jesus *“it was the LORD's will to crush him and cause him to suffer...”* - Isaiah 53v10. Job was a great example of perseverance under suffering and showed tremendous faith in God. And yet he did not know why God caused him to suffer. But he like Joseph was foreshadowing Christ. A pattern of a man who trusted in God to bring him out of trouble, even if he should die - he expressed that confidence in God, *“Though he slay me, yet will I hope in him;”* - Job 13v15. Christ was killed. Philippians 2v8; Romans 5v19. Christ knew God's will, and did it to perfection. We do not, so - like Job, we must TRUST in God who has assured us and said *“NEVER WILL I LEAVE YOU; NEVER WILL I FORSAKE YOU.”* - Hebrews 13v5. Hebrews 13v6 *“So we say in confidence, ‘The Lord is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?’”* FAITH in God is the basis of the New Covenant. If we lose faith in God - God has no pleasure in us - Hebrews 10v38. Psalm 147v11 *“the LORD delights in those who fear him, who put their hope in his unfailing love.”* Again we see that God loves us if we obey his commandments.

PRAYER is our greatest strength. 2Chronicles 16v9 *“For the eyes of the Lord range throughout the earth to strengthen those whose hearts are fully committed to him.”* Also Proverbs 24v5-6 *“A wise man has great power, and a man of knowledge increases strength; for waging war you need guidance, and for victory many advisers.”* The many advisers is the book of Proverbs – God's counsel given by the Holy Spirit, which by reading chapters of the Bible every day will be *“Your word is a lamp to my feet and a light for my path”* - Psalm 119v105 and Proverbs 22v17-20. God *“the Lord is far from the wicked but he hears the prayer of the righteous.”* - Proverbs 15v29. Jesus said in Mark 11v24 *“..whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours. And when you stand praying, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him, so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your sins”*. James adds - 1v6 *“when he (the believer) asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind.”* If it is according to God's will, he will grant it. A father knows what is good for his child, by experience - the child does not. Our Father in heaven knows what is good for us, his children, because his knowledge is infinite. HE WILL NOT TRY US ABOVE WHAT WE ARE ABLE TO BARE - 1Corinthians 10v11-13 *“These things were written down as warnings for us... So, if you think you are standing firm, be careful that you don't fall! God is faithful; he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, he will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.”*

11.23 We have seen how Jesus in his life set the perfect example for true Christian believers to follow. He obeyed God implicitly and went about preaching the Gospel and doing good. After his ascension to heaven his apostles continued his work and extended it to include Jews and Gentiles in all parts of the Roman Empire. As a result men and women learnt the true Gospel, believed it and were baptised. These believers formed ecclesias and met together regularly for worship, for breaking of bread and to encourage one another to obey God.

Since the first century the work has gone on. In each generation a few have obeyed the call of the Gospel to separate themselves and to associate together as small communities striving to obey God and to prepare for the coming of Christ from heaven. The call is the same today.

Questions

Who was Jesus' Father?

- Joseph
- God
- c) John the Baptist

250 How was Jesus conceived?

251 Did Jesus exist before his birth?

252 What work was Jesus born to do?

253 Was Jesus tempted like we are?

254 Could Jesus have sinned?

- No
- Yes because he had our human/mortal nature
- c) No because his Father was God

255 Why did Jesus rise from the dead?

256 Do we keep the Law of Moses today?

257 What is contained in the Acts of the Apostles?

258 What do the Epistles teach us?

259 The last book of the Bible, what is its message?

260 The Special Vision given to Peter – explain what it was

261 Why is baptism essential to salvation?

262 Who baptised Jesus?

263 What work did the Apostle Paul do?

264 If we believe the Gospel and are baptised, will we be saved or what else do we have to do?

265 Can we continue going to our previous church after baptism?

- Yes
- No
- c) I can go to both

266 What do baptised believers do on the first day of the week and why?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 12

12.0 RETURN OF CHRIST - Christ will return suddenly - the need for watchfulness. Read Matthew 24v30-51; Luke 21v34-36.

12.0.1

1 Thessalonians 4v16-17

(Study)

“For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord for ever.”

Nowhere does this passage state that the saints are taken to heaven. The evidence is the other way, since *“the Lord himself will come down from heaven”* - v16. *“And so will we be with the Lord for ever.”* Where? On the earth, not in heaven.

The Greek word, 'harpazo' translated 'caught up' does not in itself denote direction (either up or down). It simply means, 'to snatch away' – 'to seize, carry off by force'. Its usage is illustrated in the following references where the same verb occurs:

- a) *“the Spirit of the Lord **suddenly took Philip away**”* (Acts 8v39)
- b) *“no-one can **snatch** them out of my Father's hand.”* (John 10v29)

What is meant by *“the clouds”*? :

The clouds refer to large numbers of saints. *“Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses...”* (i.e. the faithful listed in Hebrews 11). The saints are compared with innumerable water droplets comprising a great cloud.

12.1 On Christ's return He will raise the responsible dead and judge them according to their faith and works. To those who are worthy He will extend His mercy and give them eternal life. Those who are unworthy will die, never to live again - Daniel 12v1-3; The responsible who are living will be judged. 2Timothy 4v1; *“In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead, and in view of his appearing and his kingdom,....”* Acts 17v31; John 5v27-29; 2Corinthians 5v10; Matthew 25; 1Corinthians 15v50-58; Revelation 20v6; 22v12 – *“Behold, I am coming soon! My reward is with me, and I will give to everyone according to what he has done.”*

12.1.1 Only the responsible will be raised - Luke 12v37-48: *“It will be good for those servants whose master finds them watching when he comes. I tell you the truth, he will dress himself to serve, will have them recline at the table and will come and wait on them. It will be good for those servants whose master finds them ready, even if he comes in the second or third watch of the night. But understand this: If the owner of the house had known at what hour the thief was coming, he would not have let his house be broken into. You also must be ready, because the*

Son of Man will come at an hour when you do not expect him." Peter asked, "Lord, are you telling this parable to us, or to everyone?"

The Lord answered, *"Who then is the faithful and wise manager, whom the master puts in charge of his servants to give them their food allowance at the proper time? It will be good for that servant whom the master finds doing so when he returns. I tell you the truth, he will put him in charge of all his possessions. But suppose the servant says to himself, 'My master is taking a long time in coming,' and he then begins to beat the menservants and maidservants and to eat and drink and get drunk. The master of that servant will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour he is not aware of. He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the unbelievers. "That servant who knows his master's will and does not get ready or does not do what his master wants will be beaten with many blows. But the one who does not know and does things deserving punishment will be beaten with few blows. From everyone who has been given much, much will be demanded; and from the one who has been entrusted with much, much more will be asked."* Read also Romans 2v12-13; 1Thessalonians 4v14.

12.1.2 Knowledge brings responsibility. *"because law brings wrath. And where there is no law there is no transgression."* - Romans 4v15. Many will never rise from the dead - Isaiah 26v13-14: *"O LORD, our God, other lords besides you have ruled over us, but your name alone do we honour, they are now dead, they live no more; those departed spirits do not rise. You punished them and brought them to ruin; you wiped out all memory of them"* Read Jeremiah 51v57. Only the Responsible dead will rise from the grave when Jesus returns.

12.2 At the time of, or soon after, the return of Christ, the nation of Israel will be under attack. Her invaders will be destroyed by Christ. Read Ezekiel 38 and 39; Daniel 11v40-45; Zechariah 14v1-9; Joel 3v1-7.

12.2.1 **Invasion of Israel from the North** (Study)

Israel were warned of the bitter opposition of the Arab nations in the area, Psalm 83v1-12, and, in addition, the following quotations from Ezekiel reveal the identity of a great confederacy of powerful nations to the north of Israel which will sweep down upon her land and devastate it *before* Christ reveals himself to the nations: Ezekiel 38v2 *"Son of man, set your face against Gog, of the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal; prophesy against him."* Or, to give them their modern names: Russia, Muscovy and Siberia. As long ago as 1640, Bochart, in his researches into sacred geography, pointed out that 'Ros' is the most ancient form under which history makes mention of Russia; and concerning this passage in Ezekiel, he wrote; "It is credible that from Rosh and Meshech of whom Ezekiel speaks descended the Russians and the Muscovites". The name Tubal is probably preserved in the name Tobolsk, the metropolis of Siberia, on the River Tobol.

12.2.2 **ARMAGEDDON** (Study)

What is it? It's the place (which under this name appears only in the Book of Revelation 16v14-16), of the battle on the great day of God Almighty; the time of Gods judgement of all who despise His authority and mock His name; a time of great destruction and upheaval - Rev. 16v17-21.

Is it significant that this name appears in the Book of Revelation? Yes, because the Book of Revelation (in Greek - Apocalypses from which is derived that much misused adjective 'apocalyptic') is concerned with the apocalypse' - the 'appearing' and 'revealing' of Jesus Christ, the future King of the world. Jesus' second coming and the battle of the great day of God Almighty are linked throughout the Bible.

Where is it? The name Armageddon refers to an area in Israel where the nations will be gathered for battle, though some Bible students believe the name is symbolic as well and can be broken down into its elements (shown below). Now some other Bible quotations: Joel 3v1-2 and 3v13-17. These tell us that when the Jews are a nation again in Israel (in itself a remarkable prediction) God will gather all nations ("*the kings of the whole world*" - Revelation 16 - to the *valley of Jehoshaphat* for judgement. Note:- the idea of harvest in Joel 3v13 and compare with Micah 4v11-13 and the idea of those harvested sheaves gathered for threshing; and with Daniel 2v35 and verse 45 when the harvest is '*threshed*' and the unwanted chaff is blown away. The different imagery of this last vision shows the work of judgement performed by a 'rock cut out of the mountains without hands' - surely a prophecy of Jesus - born of God and not by the will of man. So - let's put this information together:

ARMAGEDDON =

- 1) Hill or valley of Megiddo from
- 2) ARMA - Heap of sheaves on threshing floor
- 3) GE (GAI) - Valley
- 4) DON - Judgement

Hence in Joel 3 the place is called: Valley of Jehoshaphat (Jehoshaphat meaning 'judgement of Yahweh') also Valley of Decision (decision meaning 'threshing instrument'). So the last great battle, the day of God's judgement will take place in the land of Israel.

When is it? When Jesus returns to earth, this time in power and great glory to judge and rule the world - 2Thessalonians 1v7-10. His return will be unexpected, an unwelcome surprise to the majority - Revelation 16v15. But do we have any idea when He will come? Yes, many Bible prophecies describe the world scene preparatory to His coming. For example - When the Jews are again a nation in Israel - Ezekiel 38 - when the Jews control Jerusalem - Luke 21 - when a power from the North is a dominant world power - Ezekiel 38 - when other named nations are linked to or involved with this Great Power - Ezekiel 38 - when the number and complexity of apparently insoluble problems caused perplexity and despair among thinkers and world leaders. Our world today fulfils these requirements - ARMAGEDDON is near, but so is the return of Jesus who counsels us to "*stand up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near.*" also. It is suggested that you read: Matthew 24; Luke 21; Zechariah 12 and 14; Habakkuk 3; Zephaniah 3; Ezekiel 37-39.

12.3 Israel will now recognise Christ as their Saviour. They will no longer be a divided nation as in the past - Ezekiel 37v22 - "*I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel. There will be one king over all of them and they will never again be two nations or be divided into two kingdoms.*" Israel will become the head of the nations - Zechariah 8v23; Micah 4v8.

It will be a time of very great shame to the Jews who, as a nation, have always obstinately refused to acknowledge the outstanding work of Jesus of Nazareth – who now will have become the deliverer of their nation in its greatest time of trouble. There is a remarkable parallel between the lives of Joseph and Jesus. Joseph and his eleven brothers were the progenitors of the 12 tribes of Israel. His brothers sold him for twenty pieces of silver and he was carried away into a 'far country' – to Egypt. Years later they were to meet him again when he had become one of the greatest men of the age. They were greatly ashamed at their meeting, but Joseph forgave them and delivered them and their families from trouble. – Genesis 37 and 39 to 47. Jesus was sold to the Jews of his day for 30 pieces of silver. They betrayed him and, after his death and resurrection, he also went into a 'far country' – to the throne of God, but, in the days we are now considering, he will have returned in power and great glory to call his brethren to account.

12.4 The Gospel will be Preached to all nations instructing them to submit to Christ who is now King over the whole world - Revelation 14v6-7; Isaiah 2v2-5 "*In the last days the mountain of the LORD's temple will be established as chief among the mountains; it will be raised above*

the hills, and all nations will stream to it. Many peoples will come and say, "Come, let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob. He will teach us his ways, so that we may walk in his paths." The law will go out from Zion, the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. He will judge between the nations and will settle disputes for many peoples. They will beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning hooks. Nation will not take up sword against nation, nor will they train for war anymore. Come, O house of Jacob, let us walk in the light of the LORD."

- 12.4.1 Many will not listen and will have to be destroyed. - Psalm 2; Daniel 2v44; Jeremiah 25v33
"At that time those slain by the LORD will be everywhere--from one end of the earth to the other. They will not be mourned or gathered up or buried, but will be like refuse lying on the ground."

12.4.2 **The Punishment of the Responsible Wicked** (Study)

- 1) Will there be a resurrection of the wicked to suffer punishment?

Yes, for it is written in God's Word, *"there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked."* - Acts 24v15; and *"those who have done evil will rise to be condemned."* - John 5v29.

- 2) Will all the unworthy [those who are not responsible – who do not know God, or want to know God] of mankind rise from the dead to suffer punishment?

No: for it is written in God's Word of some, *"They are now dead, they live no more; those departed spirits do not rise. You punished them and brought them to ruin; you wiped out all memory of them."* – Isaiah 26v14. *"Like sheep they are destined for the grave, and death will feed on them. The upright will rule over them in the morning; their forms will decay in the grave, far from their princely mansions.... they will join the generation of their fathers, WHO WILL NEVER SEE THE LIGHT OF LIFE. A man who has riches without understanding is like the beasts that perish."* Psalms 49 v14,19-20

- 3) Who are they that will never come to life again, but pass away as though they had not existed?

Those who are in ignorance of the Gospel of Christ, and undeveloped children: for it is written: *"A man who strays from the path of understanding comes to rest in the company of the dead."* - Proverbs 21v16. *"I wish I had died before any eye saw me. If only I had never come into being, or had been carried straight from the womb to the grave."* - Job 10v18-19; 3v11-16.

- 4) Why will they never see the light of resurrection?

Because they are not responsible. It requires the knowledge of God's Word to make men and women responsible; for so it is written: *"This is the verdict (the ground for condemnation): Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil."* - John 3v19. When men and women are blind to, or ignorant of the God's Word, they have no sin to be punished for: because they have not repented and been baptised – Mark 16v16: John 9v41; John 15v22,24; 1John 5v12-13.

- 5) What will become of that portion of the wicked who are responsible – those who know God, and who will be raised at the resurrection for punishment?

They will appear before Christ to give an account of their life. They will not be accepted

by Christ and will return to the world to die again. Matthew 28v30 *“there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”* All this is written in many parts of scripture. Paul wrote, *“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due to him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.”* - 2Corinthians 5v10. Concerning those whose account is bad, Jesus said, *“Then I will tell them plainly, ‘I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!’”* - Matthew 7v23. *“There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but you yourselves thrown out.”* - Luke 13v28.

- 6) But what will become of them after they die? Will they live forever in a state of suffering?

NO: when they die, they will go into the grave and perish. Their whole experience, from their re-emergence from the grave to their return to death, is their punishment. When complete, it will be everlasting, and therefore *“everlasting punishment”* but not *“eternal torment”*.

The passages that teach this are numerous. Jesus speaks of degrees of punishment in saying *“that the servant who knows his master’s will, and does not get ready, or does not do what his master wants, will be beaten with many blows. But the one who does not know and does things deserving punishment will be beaten with few blows. From everyone who has been given much, much will be demanded; and from the one who has been entrusted with much, much more will be asked.”* - Luke 12v47-48.

As to the final result of the punishment, we are told of the unhappy subjects that *“you will die”* - Romans 8v13; *“reap destruction”* - Galatians 6v8; *“will perish”* - Psalm 73v27; 145v20; *“that day that is coming will set them on fire,”* says the LORD Almighty. *“Not a root or a branch will be left to them.”* - Malachi 4v1; *“vanish like smoke”* - Psalm 37; suffer everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord - *“They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power.”* -; 2Thessalonians 1v9; *“but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God.”* - Hebrews 10v26-27; Proverbs 10v25

“Raised Incorruptible/Imperishable”

(Study - 1 Corinthians 15 v 52-53)

It is a serious error to think that the righteous dead will come out of their graves with immortal/imperishable life. This wrong idea leaves out of account first principle Bible teaching about the Judgement Seat of Christ. ALL relevant scripture must be taken into account.

The word ‘resurrection’ in the fullest sense includes:-

- 1 a coming out of the grave
- 2 later, a raising, or changing, to immortality/imperishable of those accounted worthy. It is a raising from mortality/perishable to immortality/imperishable.

In the Bible sometimes the word “resurrection” refers only to the coming out of the grave and sometimes to the complete process. The meaning of the word “resurrection” has in every case to be decided by the context, and what the writer is writing about and of whom he is writing.

For example in Daniel 12v2 we read *“Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt.”* This teaches that both good and bad persons will be awakened from the sleep of death (the responsible dead – not everyone), and from the previous verse, we learn that this will be at a certain time. They will be awakened at the same time. This agrees with the words of Jesus in John 5v29 *“..... come out--those who have done good*

will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned." This is at the time when Jesus returns to the earth for Judgement – John 5v27 *"And he (God) has given him authority to judge because he is the Son of Man."*

The judgement seat of Christ is set up to demonstrate, publicly, and before the angels of God, who is judged, or accounted worthy of immortality, everlasting life, and who is judged not worthy. The verdict is given by Christ after each person who is responsible to Christ, has given his or her own account of his or her own life.

We learn this from:

Romans 14v10 2nd part *"..... For we will all stand before God's judgment seat."* And 2 Corinthians 5v10 *"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad."* Jesus himself tells us about his judgement seat.

For example, he pictures it for us in Matthew 25v32-46 *"When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. He will put the sheep on his right and the goats on his left. "Then the King will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.'*

"Then the righteous will answer him, 'Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you something to drink? When did we see you a stranger and invite you in, or needing clothes and clothe you? When did we see you sick or in prison and go to visit you? "The King will reply, 'I tell you the truth, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of mine, you did for me.' "Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you did not invite me in, I needed clothes and you did not clothe me, I was sick and in prison and you did not look after me.' "They also will answer, 'Lord, when did we see you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or needing clothes or sick or in prison, and did not help you?' "He will reply, 'I tell you the truth, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these, you did not do for me.' "Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life."

"All nations" here means people out of all nations, that is all those (the responsible) who have known the purpose of God and His commandments. The nations as such are never, ever, granted eternal life. Salvation is an individual matter, eternal life is granted to individuals. It also shows that some of those gathered before Christ will go away into eternal punishment, *"but the righteous into eternal life"*. The *"eternal punishment"* does not mean that they will have torments in 'hell', it means that their punishment will mean death which is final. We remember in the Garden of Eden, the punishment for Adam and Eve for their sin was death.

Jesus also tells us about the judgement seat in the parable of the 10 Virgins and the parable of the Talents - Matthew 25. These people were all judged *at the same time* – verses 6 and 7 and v 19.

From the Bible we see that the full process of resurrection is:-

- a) coming out of the grave of the responsible dead
- b) these to be joined by the responsible living
- c) all to appear before the judgement seat where reward or punishment is decided by Christ
- d) the giving of reward of eternal life, or punishment of eternal death. This will be the second death.

Proofs are; Daniel 12v2, Matthew 25v46 and John 5v29 among other verses.

The idea of eternal torments is not taught in the Bible. Everlasting fire and similar expressions mean the punishment, destruction, is total. There is no escape. For example we read in Jude v 7 about Sodom and Gomorrah *“Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as an example of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire.”* As far as the wicked inhabitants were concerned, they indeed were utterly and totally destroyed by fire. Genesis 19v24-25. The fire did not stop burning till all were dead, BUT that fire did stop burning once everything was destroyed. **It is not burning now!!**

There are some verses which seem to teach that the righteous only will rise – ie Revelation 20v6, *“Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection.”* but this speaks of those who have a ‘part’ in the first resurrection. The word ‘part’ is in the original Greek ‘meros’ and is defined as ‘a piece, part, fellowship, lot.’ This means a lot, fellowship, or portion in the resurrection to eternal life, because these will reign with Christ for a 1,000 years. Those not accounted worthy will have **NO** lot, portion or fellowship. They will be turned away by Christ, to die a second time. This will be their second death. In this verse Revelation 20v6 it is termed the first resurrection because there is to be another resurrection at the end of the 1,000 years of those who have been the mortal inhabitants of the earth who have lived and died during the 1,000 years (millennium).

The wonderful resurrection chapter – 1 Corinthians 15 is about the righteous. Neither the unrighteous nor the judgement seat is mentioned. They are however, included in other writings of the Apostle Paul as we have seen.

As mentioned previously we have to take *all* Scripture into account. 1 Corinthians 15v51-53 *“Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed-- in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality.”* - teaches that *ALL* the righteous will be changed from the mortality/human/perishable to the immortality /everlasting /imperishable, both those previously dead and raised to mortal life again and those still alive when Christ returns. v 42 and 43 *“So will it be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power;”* - summaries the process of resurrection, ie the raising from perishable to imperishable which as we have seen includes four stages. We must not make these verses contradict others where Paul gives us more details.

There is an interesting illustration of the complete process of resurrection in Daniel chapter 10 where the prophet undergoes a typical, or acted resurrection, *not* a real resurrection.

Daniel 10v8-9 *“So I was left alone, gazing at this great vision; I had no strength left, my face turned deathly pale and I was helpless. Then I heard him speaking, and as I listened to him, I fell into a deep sleep, my face to the ground.”* Daniel in the death state

Daniel 10v10 *“A hand touched me and set me trembling on my hands and knees.”* – Raised to mortal/human life again.

Daniel 10v11-17 *“He said, “Daniel, you who are highly esteemed, consider carefully the words I am about to speak to you, and stand up, for I have now been sent to you.” And when he said this to me, I stood up trembling. Then he continued, “Do not be afraid, Daniel. Since the first day that you set your mind to gain understanding and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I have come in response to them. But the prince of the Persian kingdom resisted me twenty-one days. Then Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, because I was detained there with the king of Persia. Now I have come to explain to you what will happen to your people in the future, for the vision concerns a time yet to come.” While he was saying this to me, I bowed with my face toward the*

ground and was speechless. Then one who looked like a man touched my lips, and I opened my mouth and began to speak. I said to the one standing before me, "I am overcome with anguish because of the vision, my lord, and I am helpless. How can I, your servant, talk with you, my lord? My strength is gone and I can hardly breathe."

Daniel 10v18-19 "Again the one who looked like a man touched me and gave me strength. "Do not be afraid, O man highly esteemed," he said. "Peace! Be strong now; be strong." When he spoke to me, I was strengthened and said, "Speak, my lord, since you have given me strength." Approved and strengthened and given immortality – everlasting life.

It is interesting to note that Daniel was told (Daniel 12v13) that "You will rest and then at the end of the days you will rise to receive your allotted inheritance" - a link with Revelation 20v6.

It is the name of a valley in the neighbourhood of Jerusalem, where, Isaiah informs us, the carcasses of the rejected will be consumed after the judgment - Isaiah 66v20-24. It was used for judicial purposes in old times, and will be so again on a larger scale when the dreadful scenes of Zechariah 14v12 are enacted.

This Gehenna is a place where fire will be kindled; but it is not the hell of popular belief, for it is a place on earth for carcasses, and the fire will at last burn out, and the place itself be cleansed and made holy - Jeremiah 31v40.

The 144,000 Symbolic Number in Revelation

Revelation 7v4 and Revelation 14v1-4

(Study)

The 144,000 represent the whole number of the redeemed or those who have been rewarded with immortality at the Judgement Seat of Christ. This appears from ch. 14:3, where they are styled *hoi egorasmenoi* – (the literal translation of the original Greek), "the redeemed" (or those acquired by the Lamb by a ransom or price paid, his blood) "from the earth." The real, or exact, number of the "For you know that it was not with perishable things such as silver or gold that you were redeemed from the empty way of life handed down to you from your forefathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, a lamb without blemish or defect." (1 Pet. 1:18, 19), we are told in Revelation 7:9, is "a great multitude that no one could count,". Abraham was invited to number the stars, if he were able, which, of course, he was not able to do; upon which he was told, "So shall your offspring be." Gen. 15:5. Paul tells us, we are Abraham's seed, if we are baptised into Christ; otherwise, we are not; and in Rom. 4:18, informs us, that the promise include many nations, which, in the day of Christ's return, when he dwells in the Capital of Israel, will "be joined with the LORD (Yahweh) in that day and will become my people." Zech. 2:11; Revelation 15:4.

The number of the redeemed, saved, or sealed, it is impossible for any but God to define. He has chosen to be 'reserved' upon this point—to conceal it by saying nothing about it, further than to let us know that no man can count them. It is clear, then, that 144,000 is only a definite number representative of a much larger multitude, which God Himself alone can define to a man; Revelation 7v9. For "men may seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles who bear my name, says the Lord, who does these things' that have been known for ages." or *aion*, Acts 15:17-18 and every redeemed man or woman is one of his works, says Paul, "we are God's workmanship." (Eph. 2:10). In this counting up the number of the saved, he will, therefore, remember **exactly** how many he has created after the likeness of his Son Jesus. We must be content to know simply the number by which he has thought proper to represent the unknown, and the mystery that is hidden, from all who have not the wisdom to "see" and understand.

The 144,000 being a miniature representation of a number predetermined by God, it cannot be interpreted by what is called *the literal*; a rule which, when applied to Revelation, makes it impossible to understand and leads to hollow and deceptive philosophy. Colossians 2v8 "See to it that no one

takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world rather than on Christ."

What is the mystery of God in this number? Why should the number representing the redeemed be 144,000? Why could not 121,000, or any other number, be acceptable? Because 12 and not 11, is the square root of *"that great city, the Holy Jerusalem,"* which is the Bride of Christ (ch. 21:2, 9, 10). The *holy root* of the Good Olive Tree is 12; which, when multiplied into itself, produces 144, thousands, furlongs, or cubits, as the number or measurement may be used. If, in the Holy Root, there had been only 11 sons of Israel, *"the Urim and the Thummim"* would have consisted of no more than eleven precious stones; the foursquare breastplate of judgment would have been defective in one of its rows, a twelfth stone would have been wanting; there would have been only eleven oxen under the laver, and eleven tribes of Israel; only eleven lions on the steps of Solomon's throne; there would not have been a *double* 144, *"instructed in the songs of Yahweh"* (1 Chron. 25:7); nor a *double* 144,000, under twelve captains, or princes (1 Chron. 27:15): there would have been only eleven thrones of the House of David, which would have required only eleven apostles to occupy them in the regeneration (Matt. 19:28). Had 11 been the square root, and not 12, there would have been only twenty-two elders, and 121,000 sealed, 11,000 from each of 11 tribes; there would have been only eleven gates to the Holy Jerusalem, and at the gates only eleven angels standing; there would have been only eleven foundations to the city on which only eleven names of apostles would have been inscribed. The city would have been only 11,000 furlongs, and the encircling wall but 121 cubits; and lastly, the Wood or Tree of Life would produce only eleven fruits. From this, we may see how the difference of a *unit* in the root of the Holy Square would have affected the divine numerical system from Genesis to the end of the Revelation.

Any number multiplied into itself will produce a square. In 144,000 we have a square number given, from which the square root is extractable according to rule. The extraction is the finding of the number, which, multiplied into itself, will make the given number. $12 \times 12 = 144$ —thousands, furlongs, or cubits, as the case may be. It is the square of twelve, and, as the symbol of a commonwealth, government, or city, applicable only to a community all of whose citizens are based upon a square root of 12.

In Revelation, this root is doubled in ch. 4:4, there being *"twenty-four elders,"* and in ch. 21:12, there being twelve gates and twelve angels at the gates. The reason of this is, that the Holy Square, styled in Galatians 4v26 *"... the Jerusalem that is above is free, and she is our mother,"* both Jews and Gentiles in Christ, consists of *two classes*; the one, based upon the prophets; and the natural Jewish nation, which made them citizens of the government founded on the twelve sons of Israel—their faith in promises made and covenanted to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, giving them citizenship in the Holy Square; one 12, therefore, is their symbol.

The other class, Gentiles, are adopted into the Foursquare Government, and partake of the square root 12 with those under the law, natural Israel and are also based upon another 12, the apostles of the Lamb - Jesus, with whom the believers before Christ came had no relationship.

To represent these two classes united in one and the same square, the square root is doubled in the elders, and the gates and their angels; and in Chronicles both the root and its square, where the numbers are 24 and 288, the last being a double 144. The 24 has been transferred to Revelation, where the 288 has been halved, 12 being the square root of neither 24 nor 288.

The 144,000 symbolic number consist of married people as well as single people, who have obeyed the commandments of God and Christ. Luke 20v34 Jesus said *"The people of this age marry and are given in marriage."*

Hebrews chapter 11 describes some of the faithful men and women who will be part of the symbolical 144,000 with Jesus as seen by the Apostle John in the visions of Revelation.

- 12.5 The Millennium - the thousand year reign of Christ will now commence and extend over the whole world - Revelation 20v4-6.

Christ's millennial reign will last for one thousand years
(Study)

Whilst there will be “no end” to the kingdom Christ will set up on earth, Luke 1v32–33, there will be changes of administration. The world will enjoy one thousand years of peace, Revelation 20v4, during which time, the righteous regime of Christ will bring material and spiritual blessings to all people. Men will be united in worship and in peace Isaiah 2v2-4. Conditions in the earth will be drastically changed to provide for conditions in which mankind will be a mutual blessing instead of a mutual curse. The rulers, during that period, will be immortal, Rev. 5v9–10; 2v26, though the ruled will be mortal, Isaiah 65v17–22.

- 12.5.1 The Kingdom of God to be established on this earth — Isaiah 65v17 *“Behold, I will create new heavens and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind. But be glad and rejoice forever in what I will create, for I will create Jerusalem to be a delight and its people a joy. I will rejoice over Jerusalem and take delight in my people; the sound of weeping and of crying will be heard in it no more. “Never again will there be in it an infant who lives but a few days, or an old man who does not live out his years; he who dies at a hundred will be thought a mere youth; he who fails to reach a hundred will be considered accursed. They will build houses and dwell in them; they will plant vineyards and eat their fruit. No longer will they build houses and others live in them, or plant and others eat. For as the days of a tree, so will be the days of my people; my chosen ones will long enjoy the works of their hands.”* The latter, however, will be able to work out their salvation to eternal life, which will be granted them at the end of the thousand years reign of Christ.

New Heavens and a New Earth. This is symbolic — in the scriptures sometimes heavens represent — rulers or ruling power. The new heaven will be Christ ruling on this earth — new ruler. And the new earth will be a restrained curse on the earth — “*he who dies at a hundred will be thought a mere youth*” Isaiah 65:17 — new earth — no famine etc. Psalm 72:16. Matthew 5v5 — “*The meek shall inherit the earth*” and Habakkuk 2v14 “*For the earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea.*” We wait that time shortly to be established. Read all of Psalm 72 concerning that glorious age to come.

- 12.5.2 Christ will be King. - Psalm 72; Isaiah 9v6; Luke 1v32; John 18v37. Christ will enter Jerusalem as King, to make it the metropolis of his earthly rule (Joel 3:16; Isaiah 24:23; Jer. 3:17; Matt. 5:35). He will bring the Jewish people in the land under his control (Zech. 12:7); and will then restore all those still remaining, in the countries of their dispersion (Ezek. 39:25–29; ch. 37) . They will accept him as king, and embracing his means of salvation, will be incorporated as the first dominion in the empire Christ will set up (Ezek. 37:21–23; 36:24–38; Jer. 31:31–34; Micah 4:6–7; 18–20). Israel will then be reorganised into its twelve tribes once again (Ezekiel 45).

- 12.5.3 Jerusalem will be the Capital City of the world - Jeremiah 3v17; Psalm 48v2.

Jerusalem
(Study)

Having established his power in Jerusalem, Christ will issue a proclamation to all nations calling upon them to submit to his rule, Psalm 2:10–12; Isaiah 14:32; Rev. 14:7.

Those nations that accept the summons will be incorporated in his growing empire, Isaiah 60:9; those nations that reject him will be compelled by conquest to submit Isa. 60:12; Zech. 10:3–6; 9:13; Isaiah 2v3 *"Many peoples will come and say, "Come, let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob. He will teach us his ways, so that we may walk in his paths." The law will go out from Zion, the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."*

Gradually, in ever widening circles the kingdom of God will spread throughout the earth. Its symbol, in the prophecy of Daniel, is that of a stone that grows into a mountain, and fills the whole earth, Daniel 2. Interpreting this, the prophet declared:

" The God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be destroyed, nor will it be left to another people. It will crush all those kingdoms and bring them to an end, but it will itself endure forever." Daniel 2:44.

- 12.5.4 The Temple will be established in the middle of Jerusalem and the land of Israel divided between the twelve tribes. See Ezekiel 40v48. The twelve apostles will each rule a tribe. - Matthew 19v27-28. Christ will supervise the building of a Temple in Jerusalem, to act as a House of Prayer for all nations. This will become the rallying point that will unite all people under God and His Son, Zech. 6:12–13; Isaiah 56:7; Mark 11:17; Zephaniah 3:8–9. Periodical pilgrimage will be made to Jerusalem by peoples of all nations, for the purpose of Divine worship, Zechariah 8:22–23; 14:16.
- 12.5.5 The Saints will assist Christ, as ministers and priests, in ruling the mortal nations - Revelation 5v10 *"You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth."*; Revelation 20v4 and 6;
- 12.5.6 A time of peace and plenty - see Isaiah 11v1-9 and 65v17-25 *"They will build houses and dwell in them; they will plant vineyards and eat their fruit. No longer will they build houses and others live in them, or plant and others eat. For as the days of a tree, so will be the days of my people; my chosen ones will long enjoy the works of their hands....."*; Joel 2v21.
- 12.5.7 The nations will worship at Jerusalem - Zechariah 14v16 *"Then the survivors from all the nations that have attacked Jerusalem will go up year after year to worship the King, the LORD Almighty, and to celebrate the Feast of Tabernacles."* Isaiah 27v13.
- 12.6 During the Millennium sin will be restrained and people will live longer - Revelation 20v2-3; Isaiah 65v20 *"Never again will there be in it an infant who lives but a few days, or an old man who does not live out his years; he who dies at a hundred will be thought a mere youth; he who fails to reach a hundred will be considered accursed."*
- 12.6.1 At the end of the Millennium those human/mortal nations who rebel against Christ will finally be destroyed - Revelation 20v7-9.

The Last Days of the Millennium.

Final Revolt

(Study)

To understand the strange developments at the conclusion of Christ's glorious reign we must bear in mind the natural ungratefulness of human nature – 2 Timothy 3v2, and the very long period that will have elapsed since the world was ruled by flesh and blood. From the re-establishment of the Throne of David and the overthrow of the kingdoms of men, more than a thousand years will have elapsed. During that long period the population of the earth will have consisted of two separate and distinct groups:

- a) the smaller one, comprising Christ and his immortalized co-rulers, holding all power and authority, and
- b) The much larger number, the mortal populations of the world, with their inferior sin-cursed nature firmly restrained and ruled according to the Law of Christ. They will have before them the prospect of eternal life and equality with their rulers subject to Christ's approval of their respective records at his final judgement, at the end of the millennium.

Those words of the apostle Paul will still apply: 1 Corinthians 15v50. *"I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable."*

To inherit is to receive by legal descent or succession, but (with the one exception of the Lord Jesus Christ) *"all have sinned and come short of the glory of God and are, therefore, dependent upon God's mercy and of being justified by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus."* Romans 3v23-24. A change of nature is essential. We who have lived in these last years of the kingdoms of men are only too well acquainted with the inborn wickedness of human nature.

After the final revolt by the human/mortal population at the end of the Millennium, Christ surrenders all authority to God 1 Corinthians 15v27 – 28 *"For he "has put everything under his feet." Now when it says that "everything" has been put under him, it is clear that this does not include God himself, who put everything under Christ. When he has done this, then the Son himself will be made subject to him who put everything under him, so that God may be all in all."*

We now come to the end of the Millennium and the day of resurrection for those who have lived and died since Christ's former judgement and the gathering from amongst the living of all the mortal who will have lived in the Kingdom. This time *all* the latter will be responsible because all of them will have been instructed by the Saints or will know the Lord, as it is written in Hebrews 8v10-11.

- 12.7 The Second Judgment will take place for all mortal inhabitants of the Millennial period, because all will be responsible - Revelation 20v11-15 *"Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. Earth and sky fled from his presence, and there was no place for them. And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what he had done. Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."*
- 12.8 Sin and death finally destroyed. - 1Corinthians 15v26 *"The last enemy to be destroyed is death."* ; Revelation 20v14; 21v4.
- 12.8 After the Kingdom of God has lasted a thousand years under Christ's rule and all the inhabitants of the earth have been made immortal, *"so that God may be all in all."* - 1Corinthians 15v24-28; *"Then the end will come, when he hands over the kingdom to God the Father after he has destroyed all dominion, authority and power. For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death. For he "has put everything under his feet." Now when it says that "everything" has been put under him, it is clear that this does not include God himself, who put everything under Christ. When he has done this, then the Son himself will be made subject to him who put everything under him, so that God may be all in all."* Also read Revelation 21v6-7.

Questions

- 267 When do we expect Christ to return?
a) Christ has returned already
b) Very soon
c) in 10 years time
- 268 What is the first and second work Christ will do on His return?
- 269 What will be the reward of the righteous at the Judgment?
- 270 What will happened to those who are rejected?
- 271 When Christ returns will all be raised?
a) all will be raised
b) only the Responsible in Christ
c) only those who have been baptised
- 272 Who are the responsible?
- 273 What will be happening to Israel when Christ returns?
- 274 Will Israel recognise Christ at this time?
a) yes
b) no
c) We are not told
- 275 Will Israel still be divided into two kingdoms?
- 276 When Christ returns who will now be the premier nation in the world?
a) UK
b) America
c) Israel
- 277 What will happen to the nations who resist the rule of Christ?
- 278 What is the Millennium?
a) 100 years
b) 1,000 years
c) 10,000 years
- 279 Who will be King?
- 280 Will Christ rule the whole world?
- 281 What city will be capital of the world?
a) New York
b) Jerusalem
c) London
- 282 Where will the temple be built?

- 283 Who will rule over the 12 tribes?
- a) Jesus
 - b) David
 - c) the twelve apostles
- 284 What will be the work of the Saints?
- 285 Will this be a time of peace for the nations of the world?
- 286 Will people live to a greater age at that time?
- 287 Where will they worship?
- 288 Will there be any control over the power of sin during this period?
- 289 What will happen at the end of the Millennium?
- 290 What is the Second Judgment?
- a) Judgement of the wicked
 - b) all who have ever lived
 - c) Judgement of the mortal people living during the Millennium
- 291 What is the last enemy to be destroyed?
- 292 What will happen to the Kingdom after the Millennium?
- a) Jesus will remain King
 - b) God will be 'all in all'
 - c) everyone will go to heaven
- 293 Is this the wonderful hope for those who obey God?

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

Section 13

- 13.0 **RESPONSIBILITY AND DUTY** - The Scriptures teach us that God chooses certain men and women - 1Corinthians 1v23-31; John 6v44; Romans 9v11-12; Ephesians 1v4-12 *"For he chose us in him before the creation of the world to be holy and blameless in his sight. In love he predestined us to be adopted as his sons through Jesus Christ, in accordance with his pleasure and will...."*; 4v22-24.
- 13.1 **Belief and understanding are essential.** - Proverbs 13v13; Psalm 69v13; *"I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile."* - Romans 1v16. If what was believed, before knowing this True Gospel from the Scriptures, was not according to God's Word, then there is a need to be baptised. Sadly, the baptism before was not valid and in accordance with God's will.
- 13.1.1 **Repentance - a change of mind — required.** *"The time has come," he said. 'The kingdom of God is near. Repent and believe the good news!"* - Mark 1v15.

13.1.2 **Will Faith Alone Save us?**
(Study)

Faith alone will not save us - James 2v14-18 – *"What good is it, my brothers, if a man claims to have faith but has no deeds? Can such faith save him? Suppose a brother or sister is without clothes and daily food. If one of you says to him, "Go, I wish you well; keep warm and well fed," but does nothing about his physical needs, what good is it? In the same way, faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead. But someone will say, "You have faith; I have deeds." Show me your faith without deeds, and I will show you my faith by what I do."* From this statement of the Spirit Word - a person can have a dead faith.

A living faith is shown by a person who demonstrates his belief, or faith in God by what he does. v21 *"Was not our ancestor Abraham considered righteous for what he did when he offered his son Isaac on the altar?"* Now look at Hebrews 11v17-19 – *"By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death."* If Abraham had said 'Yes, I believe that God will raise Isaac, my son from the dead, but disobeyed God's command to offer him in sacrifice, this sort of faith is a disbelieving faith - a dead faith without works, without obedience. God shows this in Genesis 22v12-18 - *"because you have obeyed me"* therefore God blessed him. His 'works' showed his 'faith' or belief in God.

Paul tells us in 1Thessalonians 1v2-3 *"We always thank God for all of you, mentioning you in our prayers. We continually remember before our God and Father your work produced by faith, your labour prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ."* See also v8; James 2v20, 22, 24 and v26. In Peter we read — 1Peter 1v7 *"These have come so that your faith--of greater worth than gold, which perishes even though refined by fire--may be proved genuine and may result in praise, glory and honour when Jesus Christ is revealed."*

13.1.3 WHO WILL RISE FROM THE DEAD? WHO WILL BE JUDGED WHEN CHRIST RETURNS? (Study)

The Responsible - those who know the TRUE GOSPEL will rise from the dead - baptised or not baptised:

Daniel 12 v 2 - *"Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake; some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever."*

Matthew 13v49-50 - *"This is how it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous and throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

Luke 12v8-9 - *"I tell you, whoever acknowledges me before men, the Son of Man will also acknowledge him before the angels of God. But he who disowns me before men will be disowned before the angels of God."*

Luke 13v24-30 - *"Make every effort to enter through the narrow door, because many, I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able to. Once the owner of the house gets up and closes the door you will stand outside knocking and pleading, 'Sir, open the door for us'. But he will answer, 'I don't know you or where you come from'. Then you will say, 'We ate and drank with you, and you taught in our streets.' But he will reply, 'I don't know you or where you come from. Away from me, all you evil doers!' There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the Kingdom of God, but you yourselves thrown out. People will come from east and west and north and south, and will take their places at the feast in the Kingdom of God. Indeed there are those who are last who will be first, and first who will be last."*

Romans 2 v 6-12 - *"God will give to each person according to what he has done'. To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honour and immortality, he will give eternal life. But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil, first for the Jew, then for the Gentile; but glory, honour and peace for everyone who does good: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile. 'For God does not show favouritism. All who sin apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who sin under the law will be judged by the law.' v 16 - "This will take place on the day when God will judge men's secrets through Jesus Christ, as my gospel declares."*

Those not responsible (who do not know the True Gospel) will not rise from the dead nor will they be brought to the Judgement Seat of Christ

Psalms 49v19-20 - *"he will join the generation of his fathers, who will never see the light of life. A man who has riches without understanding is like the beasts that perish."*

Psalms 88v5 - *"I am set apart with the dead, like the slain who lie in the grave, whom you remember no more, who are cut off from your care."*

Isaiah 26v14 - *"They are now dead, they live no more; those departed spirits **do not rise**. You punished them and brought them to ruin; you wiped out all memory of them."*

13.2 Christ is our example in all things. The power of prayer and its necessity - Hebrews 2v17; 4v15-16; 7v25 *"Therefore he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them."*; 13v15; Romans 8v34; Philippians 4v6-7 *"Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving,*

present your requests to God.....”; James 5v15-18 “And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective. Elijah was a man just like us. He prayed earnestly that it would not rain, and it did not rain on the land for three and a half years. Again he prayed, and the heavens gave rain, and the earth produced its crops.” ; Matthew 6v7-15; Luke 18v1 and v10-14.

13.2.1

OUR EQUALITY IN CHRIST

(Study)

Galatians 3v28: *“There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”*

This is our equality in Christ Jesus, and we should not despise anyone of God’s children. v26 *“You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus”* Men and women.

Matthew 18v10: *“See that you do not look down on one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels in heaven always see the face of my Father in heaven.”*

Luke 18v9-14: *“To some who were confident of their own righteousness and looked down on everybody else, Jesus told this parable.... for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.”*

Romans 14v3-10: *“The man who eats everything must not look down on him who does not, and the man who does not eat everything must not condemn the man who does, for God has accepted him. Who are you to judge someone else’s servant? To his own master he stands or falls. And he will stand, for the Lord is able to make him stand... You, then, why do you judge your brother? Or why do you look down on your brother? For we will all stand before God’s judgment seat.”*

1Corinthians 1v27-29: *“But God chose the foolish things of the world to shame the wise; God chose the weak things of the world to shame the strong. He chose the lowly things of this world and the despised things--and the things that are not--to nullify the things that are, so that no-one may boast before him. “*

But though we are one in Christ Jesus - this equality must not be allowed to break the type or pattern set by God. The due order is in 1Corinthians 11v3: *“...the head of every man is Christ, and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God.”* Why is this we ask? The woman represents the ecclesia - the body of Christ - Ephesians 5v24; 29; 32. The man represents Christ - the head of the body - Ephesians 1v22-23. The husband - 2Corinthians 11v2; The bridegroom - Matthew 9v15. The symbolic marriage - Revelation 19v7-8.

The woman must therefore have her head covered, because she, representing the ecclesia, as the bride of Christ, has had her sins covered by Christ’s perfect obedience to His Father - even unto death; Philippians 2v8. We are told in 1Corinthians 11v5 that *“every woman who prays or prophesies with her head uncovered dishonours her head.”* - (which is Christ). Because, in effect, we are implying that his perfect obedience unto death was unnecessary and that his bride (or body or ecclesia) does not have sins to be covered, which is disobedience to God and Christ’s commandments.

On the other hand, for a man to appear covered would dishonour his head, even Christ, by implying that Jesus had sins to be covered. Both man and woman are equal in Christ, but both must fulfil the type for which they are appointed. 1 Corinthians 11v7 *“A man ought not to cover his head, since he is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of man.”*

Again we say Galatians 3v28: *“There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”* This applies also to so-called class distinction, whether we are richer or poorer than our brothers and sisters and whether we come from a different tribe. All this IN CHRIST should not make any difference. We should *“Make every effort to live in peace with all men and to be holy; without holiness no-one will see the Lord.”* Hebrews 12v14. Therefore Christ said *“A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.”* John 13v34-35. Christ will soon be back on earth to set up God’s Kingdom where the types will give way to reality and righteousness will be equal unto the angels.

13.3 The need for daily reading of the Bible - Psalm 119v9-16, 97, 105; 1Timothy 4v13 and 15. *“Until I come, devote yourself to the public reading of Scripture, to preaching and to teaching..... Be diligent in these matters; give yourself wholly to them, so that everyone may see your progress.”*

13.4.1 Breaking of Bread – When Christ died his blood was poured out for the forgiveness of sins. Isaiah 53v3-9. 1Corinthians 11v23-29; *“For I received from the Lord what I also passed on to you: The Lord Jesus, on the night he was betrayed, took bread, and when he had given thanks, he broke it and said, “This is my body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of me.” In the same way, after supper he took the cup, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in my blood; do this, whenever you drink it, in remembrance of me.” For whenever you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord’s death until he comes. Therefore, whoever eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be guilty of sinning against the body and blood of the Lord. A man ought to examine himself before he eats of the bread and drinks of the cup. For anyone who eats and drinks without recognising the body of the Lord eats and drinks judgment on himself.”* - Luke 22v15-20. Meet on Sunday, the first day of the week to remember Jesus by taking the bread and wine in memory: *“On the first day of the week we came together to break bread. Paul spoke to the people”* - Acts 20v7 . To be renewed in hope.

13.4.2 General Behaviour: to work out our salvation with fear and trembling, obeying Christ’s commands to the best of our ability, showing love to one another - Philippians 2v12-13 *“Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always obeyed--not only in my presence, but now much more in my absence--continue to work out your salvation with fear and trembling, for it is God who works in you to will and to act according to his good purpose.”* John 14v15 *“If you love me, you will obey what I command.”*; 15v7-12; Matthew 5; Ephesians 5v21-32; Colossians 3v8-10 *“But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.”*; Galatians 5v19-24; Matthew 7.

13.5.1

FASTING (Study)

Abstinence from food and drink for long periods appears in Scripture as a means of expressing grief, designed to excite the compassion of God, with a view to the removal, and the avoidance of threatened calamities, national or personal - Judges 20v26; 2Samuel 1v12.

Certain days of sorrowful memory in Israel were set apart for fasting, and special occasions were frequent on where this exercise was acceptable. Associated with appeal to God, fasting came to be regarded as lending effectiveness to prayer. The man who fasted and prayed gained benefit and respect from his friends. This was an outward appearance and led inevitably to the hypocrisy which Jesus so sternly condemned - Matthew 6v18 *“Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you*

need before you ask him. "This, then, is how you should pray: " `Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Give us today our daily bread. Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.' For if you forgive men when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins. "When you fast, do not look somber as the hypocrites do, for they disfigure their faces to show men they are fasting. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. But when you fast, put oil on your head and wash your face, so that it will not be obvious to men that you are fasting, but only to your Father, who is unseen; and your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

Of Fasting as a moral and spiritual discipline there is no sure trace in Scripture; but such a passage as Daniel 9v3 may mean that it was used to produce a mind in keeping with Godliness, or God-like mind. Jesus possibly, and his followers certainly, as religious Hebrews, observed the practices of their people in this as in other respect - Acts 13v2; But the Bible does not provide the approval for the practices found in the churches of later times. We read Paul's words to the Colossians - 2v20-23 "Since you died with Christ to the basic principles of this world, why, as though you still belonged to it, do you submit to its rules: Do not handle! Do not taste! Do not touch! ? These are all destined to perish with use, because they are based on human commands and teachings. Such regulations indeed have an appearance of wisdom, with their self-imposed worship, their false humility and their harsh treatment of the body, but they lack any value in restraining sensual indulgence."

The word 'fasting' is no part of the genuine text in Matthew 17v21; Mark 9v29 and 1Corinthians 7v5.

13.5.2

FASTS (Study)

In the Mosaic Law the Day of Atonement alone is marked out as an annual Fast. – Leviticus 16v29. On that day, the children of Israel should 'deny yourself' or 'you must fast'. It fell on the tenth day of the seventh month. The people observed certain Fasts during the exile, one in the fifth, and one in the seventh month – Zechariah 7v5. In each of these months there was a day of sorrowful memory for the Jews; which may have been the day set apart for humiliation and fasting.

On the ninth day of the fourth month of Zedekiah's eleventh year, Jerusalem was taken - Jer.39v2; 52v6. On the tenth day of the fifth month, Jerusalem was destroyed - Jeremiah 52v12.

13.6 The first commandment is to love the Lord your God; Matthew 22v36-38 "Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?" Jesus replied: " `Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment."

13.6.1 The second commandment is to love your neighbour as yourself - Matthew 22v39-40 "And the second is like it: `Love your neighbor as yourself.' All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments."; 1Corinthians 13; Romans 15v1-7.

13.6.2 Preach the Gospel: Mark 16v15; 1Corinthians 9v16; Acts 28v31 "Boldly and without hindrance he preached the kingdom of God and taught about the Lord Jesus Christ".

13.6.3 Minister to other people: Matthew 25v35-40 "For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.' "Then the righteous will answer him, `Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you something to drink? When did we see you a stranger and invite you in, or needing clothes and clothe you? When did we see you sick or in

prison and go to visit you?' "The King will reply, 'I tell you the truth, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of mine, you did for me.'; Luke 10v29-37;

- 13.6.4 Attendance at the 'breaking of bread' and other Bible Study meetings with brethren and sisters: *"Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another--and all the more as you see the Day approaching." – Hebrews 10v25; "Then those who feared the LORD talked with each other, and the LORD listened and heard. A scroll of remembrance was written in his presence concerning those who feared the LORD and honoured his name." - Malachi 3v16.*
- 13.7 Particular Behaviour. Avoid giving offence: 1Corinthians 8v9-13 *"Be careful, however, that the exercise of your freedom does not become a stumbling block to the weak. For if anyone with a weak conscience sees you who have this knowledge eating in an idol's temple, won't he be emboldened to eat what has been sacrificed to idols? So this weak brother, for whom Christ died, is destroyed by your knowledge. When you sin against your brothers in this way and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ. Therefore, if what I eat causes my brother to fall into sin, I will never eat meat again, so that I will not cause him to fall."; Proverbs 18v19.*
- 13.7.1 Avoid evil, pride and materialism of the world. Colossians 3v1-10 *"Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things.Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. Because of these, the wrath of God is coming..... But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator."; 2Timothy 3v1-11; Luke 17v26-30.*
- 13.7.2 Sexual intercourse outside of marriage is unscriptural: Galatians 5v19-25; 1Thessalonians 4v3-9 *"...It is God's will that you should be sanctified: that you should avoid sexual immorality; that each of you should learn to control his own body in a way that is holy and honorable, not in passionate lust like the heathen, who do not know God; and that in this matter no one should wrong his brother or take advantage of him. The Lord will punish men for all such sins, as we have already told you and warned you."; 1Corinthians 5v1; 6v9-20.*
- 13.7.3 To obtain stimulus and seek pleasure from drugs, alcohol and smoking is condemned: - Ephesians 5v15-21; 1Peter 4v3; 1Timothy 3v3; Proverbs 20v1 - *"Wine is a mocker and beer a brawler; whoever is led astray by them is not wise."; 1Corinthians 5v11 – "But now I am writing you that you must not associate with anyone who calls himself a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat."*
- 13.7.4 Do not steal: - Matthew 19v18 – Jesus says: *"..... do not steal, do not give false testimony."; Romans 13v9; Ephesians 4v28.*
- 13.7.5 Avoid criticising others: - Matthew 7v1-5 – *"Do not judge, or you too will be judged. For in the same way you judge others, you will be judged, and with the measure you use, it will be measured to you. "Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your brother's eye and pay no attention to the plank in your own eye? How can you say to your brother, 'Let me take the speck out of your eye,' when all the time there is a plank in your own eye? You hypocrite, first take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye."; Colossians 3v5-6.*
- 13.7.6 Course of action when dealing with complaints against another: - Matthew 18v15-17 – *"If your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault, just between the two of you. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along,*

so that every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, treat him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.", 21-22; Matthew 5v21-25.

13.8 The word "saint" means "separated one" - separated from the world: Acts 15v14; 1John 2v15-17; James 4v4 – *"You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God.";* John 15v18-19 - *"If the world hates you, keep in mind that it hated me first. If you belonged to the world, it would love you as its own. As it is, you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world. That is why the world hates you.";* John 17v15-26; James 1v27.

13.8.1 Marry only true believers who live according to the commands of God and Christ. 1 Corinthians 7v39 (Where already married, do not separate): see 1Corinthians 7v1-17. 2Corinthians 6v14-18: *"Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said: "I will live with them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my people." "Therefore come out from them and be separate, says the Lord. Touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you." "I will be a Father to you, and you will be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty."*

13.8.2

Marriage (Study)

Its Divine Origin

Marriage is a divine institution. It was ordained by God in the beginning when God created Eve from a rib of Adam's side. Read Genesis 2v18-24. This was the original divine standard of marriage. One man, one woman united for life.

This original standard was reiterated by Christ, Mark 10v6-9 - *"But at the beginning of creation God made them male and female'. For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh."* This original divine standard must be upheld by all true followers of Christ.

Marriage - "only in the Lord"

Marriage with the idolatrous nations around them was strictly forbidden to Israel in the past. Read Deuteronomy 7v2-4. The consequences of marriage with those who do not live according to the commandments of Christ is seen in the case of Solomon, 1Kings 11v1-9. Also in Ezra 9v2 *"They have taken some of their daughters as wives for themselves and their sons, and have mingled the holy race with the peoples around them. And the leaders and officials have led the way in this unfaithfulness."* and Nehemiah 13v23-25 *"Moreover, in those days I saw men of Judah who had married women from Ashdod, Ammon and Moab. Half of their children spoke the language of Ashdod or the language of one of the other peoples, and did not know how to speak the language of Judah. I rebuked them and called curses down on them. I beat some of the men and pulled out their hair. I made them take an oath in God's name and said: "You are not to give your daughters in marriage to their sons, nor are you to take their daughters in marriage for your sons or for yourselves."*

Marriage with the unbeliever is just as clearly forbidden to "spiritual" Israel. Read 2Corinthians 6v14-18; 1Corinthians 7v39. In view of the very clear scriptural teaching on this matter, it is evident that marriage with the unbeliever would necessitate our withdrawal of fellowship. This, however, does not mean that if any come into the Truth already married they have to separate from their partners to whom they still have a responsibility. See 1Corinthians 7v12-14. Their aim should be to try and bring the partner into the Truth by preaching and example.

Divorce and Re-marriage

If we are endeavouring to uphold the original divine standard of marriage, any question of divorce is unthinkable. Christ clearly taught that divorce and subsequent re-marriage constituted adultery. Read the relevant scriptures:- Matthew 5v31-32; Matthew 19v3-9; Mark 10v2-12 ; Luke 16v18.

The references in Mark and Luke are quite clear. There can be no divorce and no re-marriage without any exception. In the references in Matthew, however, Christ says “*except it be for fornication*” (marital unfaithfulness), appearing to allow divorce for this one reason. What did Christ mean by this? There are some, with whom we are not in fellowship, who contend that Christ here allowed divorce and re-marriage where one partner had proved unfaithful and had committed adultery. But this is not what Christ said. In the passage he uses two quite distinct words for “adultery” and “fornication” and they are not interchangeable. We must remember that in the references in Matthew, Christ was contending with the Pharisees and was contrasting their law and tradition with his own teaching. In the record in Matthew ch 19 he was actually answering a question put to him by them “tempting” him. It was not a sincere question but one intended to trap him. At the time there was a contention between two of the Jewish sects regarding the question of divorce, one holding that divorce was allowable under the Mosaic law for almost any reason. That is why they phrased the questions: “*Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any and every reason?*” They wanted to see which “side” Christ would take. But what did Christ do? First of all, he took them right back to the beginning, to the original divine law. That was *his* standard of marriage. But, as he was speaking to Jews, under the Law, he did concede to them that the Mosaic law did allow divorce for one - and only one - reason. This cause we find in Deuteronomy 24v1-4. From Exodus 22v16-17 we can deduce that the “uncleanness” was unchastity before marriage which was not discovered until after the marriage had taken place. It certainly was not adultery which, under the Law, was punishable by death. In referring to this law, Christ used the word “fornication” (marital unfaithfulness – Greek for this word is ‘porneia’) but added that even such a provision under their Law was only because “*your hearts were hard*”.

It is very clear from Christ’s words that *his* standard was the original divine standard in Eden and that any divorce and re-marriage was adultery. The Greek word for ‘adultery’ is ‘moichao’. We should note that in the Mark record, when his own disciples later asked him again about the matter privately ‘in the house’ he made no exceptions. His words were quite clear - Mark 10v12. That is the standard which all of his disciples must uphold.

Under this section, mention should be made, however, of the position of any who ***before coming to a knowledge of the Truth***, have divorced and re-married. The question may be asked whether they should be required to separate before being baptised. The answer is that as they were divorced and re-married whilst ignorant of the commands of Christ, they were not at that time responsible. They can, therefore, be accepted as legally married subject to an undertaking from then onwards, to uphold the law of Christ in this as in all other matters.

Polygamy

It is clear that the original divine standard of marriage is “*one man, one wife*”. In most countries now polygamy is illegal. In countries, however, where it is still permissible, any, who, before being responsible to the commandments of God and Christ, had more than one *wife should continue to support them*. He/she would however, not be free to contract any further marriage on becoming a brother or sister. This situation apparently existed in the 1st Century and it is instructive to note that when Paul gave directions concerning the appointment of elders he stressed that only those with ‘one wife’ should be eligible. 1Timothy 3v1-12; Titus 1v5-9. This was because, being in the public eye and having to guide the ecclesias in right ways, they had themselves to be, as far as humanly possible, above reproach.

(Study)

There is a general impression to the effect that the objection to marriage with the unbeliever is founded on the expression of Paul in 1Corinthians 7v39, that widows are at liberty to marry again for *"she is free to marry anyone she wishes, but he must belong to the Lord."* It will be found on investigation that this is a mistake. Paul's expression taken in its special connection is certainly a strong indication: but the objection to mixed marriages stands on a much broader ground. It is involved in the broad principle that the consecration required by Christ at the hands of his people is so complete as to exclude friendship with the present world. *"You do not belong to the world" - "Therefore come out from them and be separate" - "don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred towards God?"* These restrictions are disagreeable and inconvenient, but cannot be evaded by such as are resolved to be obedient.

This larger rule, the need for separation, covers the question of marriage: An unbeliever is a part of the world and has little or no concern for the things of God. How can a true and sincere believer of the scripture, who is focused on that future inheritance in the kingdom of God, choose a partner, a wife or a husband who is not a believer? This is contrary to God's commands and is offensive to him. Such action constitutes disobedience to the commands for one who desires to do God's will and to serve the Lord Jesus Christ, and to honour and uphold his commandments.

Coming to definite indications on the subject, the mind of God has in all generations of mankind been expressed adversely to inter-marriage with unbelievers. Mention is made of such marriages before the flood. *"The sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful, and they married any of them they chose."* The Flood swept away the result. When God afterwards chose a nation for Himself, the law He gave them was very specific on this point: *"Do not intermarry with them."* This was a moral matter. *"For they will turn your sons away from following me."* Israel disobeyed this law as they disobeyed the other laws. Judgment and captivity was the result. When they came back from Babylon, it was evident that they had gone astray in this matter, and made marriages with the people of the land. In connection with this we have the picture of Ezra casting himself down before God in an agony of shame, confessing their sin and imploring mercy. The severe remedy of pulling away the strange wives followed. We read Ezra 9v1 - 6 *"The people of Israel, including the priests and the Levites, have not kept themselves separate from the neighboring peoples with their detestable practices, They have taken some of their daughters as wives for themselves and their sons, and have mingled the holy race with the peoples around them. And the leaders and officials have led the way in this unfaithfulness."* When I heard this, I tore my tunic and cloak, pulled hair from my head and beard and sat down appalled. Then everyone who trembled at the words of the God of Israel gathered around me because of this unfaithfulness of the exiles. And I sat there appalled until the evening sacrifice....I rose from my self-abasement, with my tunic and cloak torn, and fell on my knees with my hands spread out to the LORD my God and prayed:" Ezra 10v2-3 *"Then Shecaniah son of Jehiel, one of the descendants of Elam, said to Ezra, "We have been unfaithful to our God by marrying foreign women from the peoples around us."..... "Now let us make a covenant before our God to send away all these women and their children, in accordance with the counsel of my lord and of those who fear the commands of our God. Let it be done according to the Law."*

Coming on to ecclesial times, we have the same law of separation not to *"be yoked together with unbelievers."* If this applies to any kind of yoking, then it must apply to marriage which is so important to a man or woman. A man is more influenced by his wife than by any human being, and a wife by her husband. *"He who walks with the wise grows wise, but a companion of fools suffers harm."* – Proverbs 13v20. This applies to all degrees of association, but most powerfully of all to the closest - surely.

The Bible view of marriage is that they are *"one flesh."* How then could a brother or sister aiming to be holy to God, make themselves one flesh with an unbeliever? The apostolic command always states a husband and wife as both *"belonging to the Lord."* Peter advises personal harmony *"so that*

nothing will hinder your prayers." There could be no question of this sort if one of them were an unbeliever. He speaks of the relation of husbands to their wives, as being *"heirs with you of the gracious gift of life."*

It is stated by some as an objection that Paul in 1Corinthians 7 permits a brother or sister to remain with an unbelieving wife or husband. In truth, this permission bears the very opposite significance. It was in answer to a question on the subject, put to Paul by the Corinthians in writing (as the first verse shows). The question was; what is a man or woman who was married before becoming a believer, now found themselves in association with an unbelieving wife or husband? Now, had Paul's teaching allowed mixed marriages, how could such a question as this have arisen? The very fact that the Corinthians found it necessary to ask Paul's guidance in such circumstances, is a proof that they recognised that the right thing for believers was to be married to believers only. The answer is, they were to remain together if agreeable. But a husband or wife being dead, *"she is free to marry anyone she wishes, but he must belong to the Lord."* (1Corinthians 7v39).

Common-sense and Scripture unite in pointing out the right line of action. Some reject Paul's judgment in the matter in that he had *"received no commandment"* on the subject, but spoke *"by permission,"* and gave his judgment as *"one who had received mercy of the Lord to be faithful."* A little reflection ought to save them from this mistake. Do they think the Lord would have *"permitted"* Paul to give a wrong judgment in the case? Paul refers to *"faithfulness"* as the inspiring motive of his advice: this shows that his judgment was something more than the expression of an opinion; it was the faithful exercise of a prerogative, the weight of which he seeks to bring to bear in the concluding remark, *"and I think that I too have the Spirit of God."* Here is a man who steps forward and says, *"I have the Spirit of God. God permits me, as a faithful man, to give this judgment on the matter you ask me about."* Is it possible that enlightenment fully awake could hesitate to submit implicitly to such a judgment? - R.R.

13.8.4 Divorce: Mark 10v11-12: *"He (Jesus) answered, "Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her. And if she divorces her husband and marries another man, she commits adultery."* – 1Corinthians 7v11 v19; Romans 7v1-3.

13.8.5

Divorce and Remarriage

(Study)

God HATES divorce - Malachi 2v16. It is the breaking of a covenant (v14). Yet God allowed it under the law of Moses because of the hardness of their hearts, as Jesus said in Matthew 19v8. But he pointed out that *"It was not this way from the beginning."* Following on from this, Jesus' own disciples asked him privately concerning this matter because they desired to fully understand these issues Mark 10v10. So Mark writes 10v2-10, *"When they were in the house again, the disciples asked Jesus about this - v4 about divorce - which the Pharisees had put to Jesus testing him, - v2 "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife? What did Moses command you? he replied, They said, Moses permitted a man to write a certificate of divorce and send her away - It was because your hearts were hard that Moses wrote you this law", Jesus replied. But at the beginning of creation God 'made them male and female - For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh. So they are no longer two, but one. ("the wife of your marriage covenant." Malachi 2v14) - v9 -Therefore what God has joined together; let man not separate."*

Jesus then explained **to his own disciples** - his law, which was his Father's law - for he was God's Son. v11 *"Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her."* v12 – *"And if she divorces her husband and marries another man, (not allowed under the Jewish law) she commits adultery."*

Now the disciples taught this in 1Corinthians 7v10-11 - *"To the married I give this command (not I, but the Lord): A wife must not separate from her husband. But if she does, she must remain unmarried or else be reconciled to her husband. And a husband must not divorce his wife."* This is

Christ's law to his own disciples - and being compassionate - like his heavenly Father, he permitted a separation - providing they remained unmarried otherwise they would be committing adultery. Shown in Mark 10v10.

Why then did Jesus say - in Matthew 5v32 "But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except for marital unfaithfulness (fornication), (permitted under the law of Moses) causes her to become an adulteress, and anyone who marries the divorced woman (permitted under the law of Moses) commits adultery." Joseph the husband of Mary - Matthew 1v19 "*was a righteous man, (a Jew) and did not want to expose her to public disgrace, he had in mind to divorce her quietly*" - because he thought she had committed fornication (sexual relations between unmarried persons). He was already engaged to be married to Mary and was allowed this under the law of Moses - Deuteronomy 24v1.

In Matthew chapter 5 Jesus was teaching the Jewish multitudes as well as his **own disciples who - being Jews were still under the law of Moses** - as was obvious from v 24 - also Matthew 8v1-4 confirms this - but in the house privately he did not mention the provision of the Law of Moses in Deut. 24v1. To his own disciples he raised the standard of behaviour to a higher position than the law of Moses and took them back to the beginning of creation. Matthew 5v28 "*But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart.*"

From then on - the Gospel was to be preached in all the world, not to Jews only - and that was why he said, "*If a woman divorces her husband (this was allowed under Gentile law) and be married to another, she commits adultery.*" For Christ's disciples, Christians - divorce is not permissible.

13.8 Separate from wrong behaviour or doctrine: "*If anyone teaches false doctrines and does not agree to the sound instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, he is conceited and understands nothing. He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words that result in envy, strife, malicious talk, evil suspicions and constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth and who think that godliness is a means to financial gain. - "depart from such".* (From NIV but Young's Literal Translation adds the final words. 1Timothy 6v3-5; 2Thessalonians 3v6; v14 "*If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of him. Do not associate with him, in order that he may feel ashamed.*"; 2 John v8-11.

13.9.1

False Prophets

(Study)

We read in Luke 20v46-47 "*Beware of the teachers of the law. They like to walk around in flowing robes and love to be greeted in the market-places and have the most important seats in the synagogues and the places of honour at banquets. They devour widows' houses and for a show make lengthy prayers. Such men will be punished most severely.*" Also Galatians 1v6-9 "*I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel - which is really no gospel at all. Evidently some people are throwing you into confusion and are trying to pervert the gospel of Christ. But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the ONE we preached to you, let him be eternally condemned! As we have already said, so now I say again: If anybody is preaching to you a gospel other than what you accepted, let him be eternally condemned!" Well!!!*

13.10 Not to take legal action against another person - 1Corinthians 6v1 and v7 . 13.10 "*If any of you has a dispute with another, dare he take it before the ungodly for judgment instead of before the saints? Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if you are to judge the world, are you not competent to judge trivial cases? Do you not know that we will judge angels? How much more the things of this life! Therefore, if you have disputes about such matters, appoint as judges even men of little account in the church! I say this to shame you. Is it possible that there is nobody among you wise enough to judge a dispute between*

believers? *But instead, one brother goes to law against another--and this in front of unbelievers!*"

"The very fact that you have lawsuits among you means you have been completely defeated already. Why not rather be wronged? Why not rather be cheated? Instead, you yourselves cheat and do wrong, and you do this to your brothers."

"Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homosexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God. And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God." 1Corinthians 6v1-11.

13.11 Take no Part in politics – Romans 13v1-3 *"Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God. Consequently, he who rebels against the authority is rebelling against what God has instituted, and those who do so will bring judgment on themselves. For rulers hold no terror for those who do right, but for those who do wrong. Do you want to be free from fear of the one in authority? Then do what is right and he will commend you."*

13.12 Not to join the armed forces - John 18v36 *"Jesus said, "My kingdom is not of this world. If it were, my servants would fight to prevent my arrest by the Jews. But now my kingdom is from another place.";* 2Corinthians 10v3-5 *"For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ."*

13.12.1 **Fight for Christ and NOT for Man**
(Study)

2Corinthians 10v3-4. *"For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds."*

CHRIST'S COMMANDS are in Matthew 5 v 39-45.

"But I tell you, Do not resist an evil person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also... You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbour and hate your enemy. But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven.."

CHRIST'S ARMOUR - Romans 13v12 *"...So let us put aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armour of light."*

2Cor. 6v7: *"... the weapons of righteousness..."*

Ephesians 6v11-17 *"Put on the **full armour of God** so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Therefore put on the **full armour of God**, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. Stand firm then, with the **belt of truth** buckled round your waist, with the **breastplate of righteousness** in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the*

gospel of peace. *In addition to all this, take up the **shield of faith**, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the **helmet of salvation** and the **sword of the Spirit**, which is the **word of God.**"*

"*I AM THE WAY*" said Jesus, John 14v6 and he showed us that way - BY EXAMPLE.

He preached the Gospel - Matt. 9v35

He prayed for those who spitefully used him - Luke 23v34

He died for those who believe in him - John 3v15-17

He did not resist when arrested – John 18v8

Christ's words in Matthew 26v52 should convince us that to take the sword is wrong. "*All who draw the sword will die by the sword.*"

As we saw from 2Corinthians 10v3-4 the warfare of this world is not for us - our warfare will be with Christ in the future - when he takes over the kingdoms of this world.

Psalms 2v6-12 - "*I have installed my King (God's king) on Zion, my holy hill....* V8 "*Ask of me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession. You will rule them with an iron sceptre; you will dash them to pieces like pottery.*"

This also applied to Christ's brethren (those baptised into him - Galatians 3v27-29); Revelations 2v26-27 "*To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations -- 'He will rule them with an iron sceptre; he will dash them to pieces like pottery' -- just as I have received authority from my Father.*"

13.12.2 Military Service.

13.12.3 Occupations unsuited to a True Brother or Sister of Christ (Study)

Christ clearly taught that his followers must not resist evil. We must not resort to force, nor are we permitted to avenge ourselves. We must, rather, submit to wrong and render good for evil. We must pray to God, through Jesus, always to help us. Consider carefully the following references:-

| | | |
|-------------------------|---|--------------------|
| "Resist not evil" | - | Matthew 5v38-42 |
| "Love your enemies" | - | Matthew 5v43-48 |
| "Avenge not yourselves" | - | Romans 12v19-21 |
| "Not to take the sword" | - | Matthew 26v51-52 |
| | - | Luke 22v50-51 |
| | - | John 18v10-11 |
| "Not to go to law" | - | 1Corinthians 6v1-8 |
| "Not to take an oath" | - | Matthew 5v34-37 |
| | - | James 5v12 |

Having looked at the references, we shall readily be able to appreciate how they control our actions regarding our relationship with the '*authorities that exist*'. Let us consider various aspects:-

- a) Military Service: This would necessitate our using the modern weapons of warfare and, if necessary, killing. In such service we would be forced to give unqualified obedience to the State whether such commands contravened the commands of Christ or not. We would also be part of the forces of this world and compromise our position of separation.

- b) Police Service: The above points apply to police service. A Police officer is under orders to enforce the law by any means.
- c) Security Officer - The above principals apply to a Security Officer. The Company for whom you would be working could insist that you keep their premises safe, even by using force if you had to.
- d) Going to Law: Following our baptism we follow the Law of Christ which forbid us to take legal action to redress wrongs committed against us. We have to suffer wrong for Jesus said *"do not resist an evil person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also."*
- e) Voting: In a democratic state everyone has a right to vote. We cannot exercise this right as we can take no part in the politics of the world. Such matters are overruled by God according to his purpose. Romans 13v1 *"Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God."*
- f) Trade Unions: However worthy their original aims, Trade Unions are now largely political organisations and use methods to gain their ends which are completely inconsistent with our position in the Truth. As servants we have to submit and give good service without complaining. - Colossians 3v22-25; Ephesians 6v5-8; 1Timothy 6v1-2; 1Peter 2v18-20.

Although we do not take any part in the politics of the world, yet we have to be submissive and obedient to their demands and laws in so far as these laws do not conflict with the commands of Christ. We must at all times be model law-abiding citizens. We must be honest in all our dealings and pay such taxes as are laid upon us. This is clearly taught in the following references:- Matthew 22v15-22; Mark 12v13-17; Luke 20v20-26; Matthew 17v24-27; Romans 13v5-7; 1Peter 2v11-17

- 13.13 Honest to God. We must at all times be honest to God, brethren and sisters and everyone we speak to. Proverbs 30v7-9 *"Two things I ask of you, O LORD; do not refuse me before I die: Keep falsehood and lies far from me; give me neither poverty nor riches, but give me only my daily bread. Otherwise, I may have too much and disown you and say, 'Who is the LORD?' Or I may become poor and steal, and so dishonor the name of my God."* Matthew 19v17-19 *"Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments." "Which ones?" the man inquired. Jesus replied, "Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, honor your father and mother,' and 'love your neighbor as yourself.'"; Luke 3v14 *"Don't extort money (obtain money by deceptive means) and don't accuse people falsely--be content with your pay."* If, before we were baptised we obtained money by dishonest ways, we must change our ways and live according to God and Christ's commandments.*

- 13.14 Fellowship Our fellowship with God and His dear Son is very precious. Our fellowship with each other is also very precious, like the Truth itself on which it is based.

It is hoped that the following notes will be helpful in our making a stand against any changes which compromise the Truth.

- a) Are we able scripturally to retain in fellowship those who, either - themselves do not accept our basis of fellowship or - are willing to fellowship those who do not accept our position?
- b) Can distance or local circumstances affect the answer?

OUR 'DAWN' FELLOWSHIP

Our fellowship with one another in the Truth is very precious; yet, like so many good things which we have, we almost certainly take it for granted. For example, it is good to be able to exchange visits between ecclesias and our brethren and sisters, and to be able to join together in fraternal meetings and other ecclesial and inter-ecclesial activities. These things we are able to do because, in spite of social and personality differences and incompatibilities, we have one underlying thing in common; we are fellows or partners together. We share the knowledge and hope of The Truth; we also try together to uphold its principles and guard against disunity and error. This precious heritage of fellowship would be lost if its basis were to be changed as some are advocating. Let us then consider, among other things, our basis of fellowship with one another; how we should maintain that fellowship in the light of what God has commanded and why we are separated from other communities of Christadelphians.

What is Fellowship?

It is the state of being fellows, partners or sharers; having things in common; the association with those with similar interests or aims. It also describes the bond between them. In the New Testament the original Greek word and its related words, have been variously rendered as “fellowship, common, communion, companion, communication, distribution, partaker, partner”, all expressing the basic idea of sharing and association.

The fellowship of which the Scriptures speak is, primarily, the association, communion and partnership with God which He has graciously offered to men, and, secondarily, the communion between those who are in such fellowship with God. (1Corinthians 1v9; 1John 1v3, 7)

Fellowship between the saints was described by Bro. Roberts as “cordial and loving union, springing from oneness of mind in Divine things”. These Divine things are the Light which God has graciously caused to shine in our hearts (2Corinthians 4v6). Receiving and walking in that Light brings fellowship with God the Father and His son Jesus Christ, and also fellowship one with another. (1John 1v5-7)

Fellowship is often thought of as having negative connotations but it is really a very positive thing which can help us in our probationary walk to the Kingdom. It is our association and partnership together with God Almighty as His sons and daughters because He has given us the Light of His Truth. It is an exclusive association, because by His Truth He has called us out of the world. In scriptural language it means walking with God, and walking together in the Light.

We can think of ourselves as being family partners - in partnership with God, His dear Son and with one another. We are part of His great enterprise of preparing us for the coming Day of perfect partnership and fellowship amidst the blessings of the immortal state. Our aim, therefore, must be to walk and work together now with one mind and purpose, “*so that there may be no divisions among you and that you may be perfectly united in mind and thought*” (1Corinthians 1v9-10), “*contending as one man for the faith of the gospel*”. (Philippians 1v27).

Because the Truth, and the Fellowship based upon it, is so precious, we must do all we can to safeguard it, particularly in our own minds and hearts and in our daily walk, thereby helping our partners in the Truth to do the same. “*whoever continues in the teaching has both the Father and the Son*” - and is therefore in fellowship with them. (2 John 9).

This is the positive aspect of fellowship. There is, of course, a negative side, for John also says “*Anyone who runs ahead and does not continue in the teaching of Christ does not have God*” - and cannot therefore have fellowship with Him, nor be in fellowship with those who do believe in Christ's doctrine.

Concerning those who did depart from the doctrine of Christ, the apostle's command was to not receive them:- *"If anyone comes to you (as a teacher?) and does not bring this teaching (Christ's teaching), do not take him into your house or welcome him (ie greet him and wish him well). Anyone who welcomes him (in fellowship with) shares in his wicked work."* (2John 10,11). To receive and greet one who brought in false teaching (not according to the Light given by God) was to imply that his false doctrine was of no consequence. It would rather encourage him and others, allowing the error to spread. Those encouraging him by tolerating his teaching would therefore be in fellowship with his evil deeds. Consistent with this is Christ's own rebuke, in the Revelation, to certain ecclesias for retaining errors in their midst. (Revelation 2)

Here then is a basic principle governing our attitude to others who advocate different doctrines and practices. It must be as valid now as then because the Truth, which expresses God's mind, does not change.

The Basis of our Fellowship

What constitutes the Light to which we have referred? The simple answer is **"The Truth"**; but because we are talking about the basis of our fellowship together we need to be more precise, otherwise there is room for misunderstanding and uncertainty. For this purpose, the booklet entitled "A Statement of the One Faith, forming the Christadelphian Basis of Fellowship", defines the essential elements of our Faith in matters of doctrine and practice. It is a summary of our understanding of God's light on those fundamental truths which bind us together.

Our Statement of Faith is **not** the same as that of the other Christadelphian bodies. It includes

- (a) our understanding of New Testament commands regarding going to law, divorce and remarriage, and
- (b) the doctrine regarding fellowship (explained for example by the apostle John as already quoted), that we cannot fellowship those who practice, teach or condone things contrary to Christ's doctrine which the Statement of Faith defines.

Our fellowship is firmly based on this common understanding of God's Truth and its obligations.

The Nature of Fellowship

Now the nature of the fellowship we have with God is obviously different from that which we have with each other. The communion which we are able to have with God is an individual personal communion of an enlightened heart and mind; and the state of that heart and mind is known only to God and determines the state of fellowship with Him. In contrast, our fellowship with one another can only be based on the outward profession and behaviour of each brother and sister showing that we uphold the same things and the same standards and hence wish to associate together.

Doctrine into Fellowship

When we were baptised we began our fellowship with the Father. Soon after, the ecclesia welcomed us and extended its fellowship and that of all brothers and sisters who believe the same things. As a result we enjoy the communion and partnership of being of one mind in true fellowship with our fellow believers.

When **we welcome** a newly baptised brother or sister and "receive them into fellowship" it is important to remember that by that public act we are not receiving that person into fellowship **with God**. That has already taken place in the act of baptism.

When we welcome and "receive into **our** fellowship" a brother or sister, we do so recognising that there are other Christadelphian communities or "fellowships". By our act of "receiving into our

fellowship” we are publicly declaring that the brother or sister concerned has become a fellow-partner with us, because we share a common basis of faith on which we will henceforth associate.

This basis should have been explained and agreed to at the instruction and interview preceding baptism.

Breaking of Fellowship

If a brother or sister, after a lapse of time, is no longer in harmony with the basis on which our fellowship depends and makes this known either by word or behaviour, he or she is straining, and ultimately breaking, the bond of unity (the fellowship) with all other brethren and sisters. Should this situation of disharmony persist after patient efforts towards trying to win our brother or sister back, have been exhausted, the ecclesia would be obliged, as a last resort, to declare publicly to all those in our fellowship its dissociation from the brother or sister concerned, and so reverse the action taken at the “receiving in” to fellowship.

Withdrawal of Fellowship

This point of last resort is the occasion when we collectively, as members of an ecclesia, recognise and declare to the whole body of believers that the bond which previously existed between us and the brother or sister concerned has sadly been broken. Withdrawal should not be “excommunication”, but is a sorrowful acknowledgement that that brother or sister is no longer “with” us. It is our communal way of applying the scriptural command to “withdraw yourselves”.

Do we then by that act withdraw their fellowship with God? - No; definitely not! Nothing we say or do in this matter of withdrawal from a brother or sister must be construed as withdrawing, or even breaking, the individual’s own fellowship with God. That will always remain from the day of baptism a personal matter between the individual and the Creator. We cannot know the extent, or the timing, of any breakdown in that fellowship, nor of any possible intermediate healing. None of us can presume to pronounce another to be out of fellowship with God.

What we can and do say is that by the outward evidence known to us, such an one is clearly not of the same mind as us and is therefore not in fellowship with us in our understanding of what constitutes fellowship with God. So ecclesially we stand aside, and pray for an eventual resumption of the partnership we previously had together.

Furthermore because an individual ecclesia is only part of the whole body of believers what we do in this matter of receiving into and withdrawal of our fellowship is done on behalf of the body as a whole.

Ecclesial Fellowship

Although the Ecclesial Body is made up of separate ecclesias we must not think of our **fellowship** being fragmented. Geographical location, as well as numerical strengths of individual ecclesias are of no account in the matter of ecclesial fellowship. It cannot be limited or changed by distance, or location, or local circumstances. Our fellowship is made up of the body of believers throughout the world who are in fellowship with one another because they all are of one mind regarding the foundation.

For one ecclesia to accept into fellowship a person who has scripturally and properly been rejected by another ecclesia, or had another ecclesia’s fellowship withdrawn, must prevent fellowship between these two ecclesias because there is not unity. Those who accept that person into their ecclesia are accepting or condoning the offence involved. They thus have fellowship with the “evil deed” (2John v11), because they have associated themselves with the offender.

Some sections of Christadelphians, however, are unwilling to accept the need for world-wide unanimity among ecclesias on all essential matters of doctrine and practice.

We cannot fellowship those who are not willing to act against, and who tolerate (i.e. fellowship) those who the Scripture teaches are in error, and from whom, in some cases, we ourselves have previously withdrawn. Neither can we fellowship the introduction of ideas which nullify the very Gospel which we preach ecclesially and individually. The clear evidence that such things **are** effectively tolerated under the Christadelphian 'Central' community system of Ecclesial Autonomy, can be adduced from the writings of those who are, or have been, closely involved. (See Appendix).

Ecclesial Autonomy

Ecclesial Autonomy is good and right when matters solely within an individual ecclesia's jurisdiction are involved, but it must not be allowed to extend to fundamental matters affecting fellowship which are the concern of the whole community. It is the practice in the Christadelphian 'Central' community to allow **all** matters, including matters involving fellowship between the brethren and sisters and between ecclesias, to be the sole responsibility of the individual ecclesia concerned.

If that ecclesia chooses not to take action, even if other ecclesias condemned the offence in question, nothing is done, because of the autonomy rule. Hence the offence remains: the leaven is not purged out and continues to permeate. This of course makes a mockery of the Scriptural concept of one mind and one body in Christ, if different standards on vital matters are adopted in neighbouring ecclesias who claim fellowship together.

If a brother or sister in the Christadelphian 'Central' community wanted a divorce all he or she would have to do is find an ecclesia in Central which allowed it. He or she could then be divorced and even remarry, and still be in fellowship with those in other ecclesias who proclaim they do not believe in divorce and remarriage.

The future prospects for God's Truth under such a system of "fellowship" must be poor indeed. Acceptance by the 'Central' community of the doctrine of ecclesial autonomy, and the errors it conceals, suggests it is well-nigh impossible to halt the present decline in doctrine and practice. It is significant that this problem has again been brought to light in issues of The Christadelphian magazine.

We should continue to encourage those in the 'Central' community who are dismayed at the situation to apply the scriptural remedy in their own cases and withdraw themselves. Those who formed the "Old Paths" fellowship in 1957 did so; and that action of itself provides a sufficient testimony to the situation. They themselves have publicly testified to the apostacy which Central's unscriptural concept of fellowship has permitted to exist and persist.

Over the years various attempts have been made to persuade those in the 'Central' community to make a stand on matters which they, like us, find unacceptable. It is a matter of great sadness that, with few exceptions, they have so far not been prepared to give practical and scriptural effect to their concern at the disunity which exists. Rather it will continue to be necessary for them, as individuals, to choose at which ecclesias, other than their own, they will feel able and willing to share (have fellowship in) the breaking of bread. Instead they ought to feel free to break bread with any and all in their community, as we are able to do because we are of one mind.

We may thus be assured that the scriptural doctrine of a united fellowship - walking together only with those of like mind - is the path we should continue to follow. It is scriptural and it is logical. To abandon this and say in effect that to have a united fellowship does not really matter, and that we can be in fellowship with those who disagree with us and from whom for sound scriptural reasons we have for so long been separated, is to ignore God's mind expressed in the scriptures and opt out of the responsibility placed upon us to defend the Truth committed to us.

Appendix

A LEGACY FROM THE PAST

There are some who say, 'What has happened in the past is not relevant to the situation today'. This is in fact not so. The present divided brotherhood stems from a willingness in the past to tolerate errors of doctrine and practice for the sake of union. These errors over the years have acted as leaven to divide the brotherhood still further in both belief and practice.

The 'Central' community was formed in 1957 with the reunion of three groups of Christadelphians not in fellowship with Dawn. In addition to the fact that none of the three groups took a stand on divorce and remarriage, they fellowshipped those who held other errors. In summary, these groups were as follows:

- 1 **Suffolk Street:** formed by those who held that it was not necessary to accept that all Scripture is the inspired word of God. This group included those who maintained that only those who have been baptised will be raised to judgment (the 'Resurrectional Responsibility' question).
- 2 **The Shield Group** (a part of the Suffolk Street Group): included in fellowship those who held what is known as the 'Clean Flesh' heresy which maintained that Christ did not share our nature.
- 3 **Temperance Hall:** included in fellowship those teaching errors concerning military and police service.

A number of early attempts to unite these groups failed because a common doctrinal basis could not be found. One such move in 1940 was abandoned when Temperance Hall, the stricter group, correctly insisted that every individual brother and sister unreservedly accepted the Birmingham Amended Statement of Faith (BASF). By 1957 however, the Temperance Hall position had changed, to the extent that:

- 1 The BASF, acceptance of which they had previously insisted upon, was effectively weakened, by the issue of two formal letters, to accommodate those in Suffolk Street who could not accept the BASF with regard to 'Resurrectional Responsibility'.
- 2 The 'Clean Flesh' error was accommodated by substituting an addendum for those clauses in the BASF defining the nature of man and Jesus and the effect of his sacrifice. This document omits features of the original clauses.
- 3 Reunion was accepted after a ballot. A majority vote in each ecclesia, rather than individual acceptance, was considered sufficient, thus **allowing the dissenting minority to be received into fellowship.**

Thus, at reunion, the Temperance Hall basis of fellowship was changed to accommodate error. A dissenting minority of brethren and sisters in that fellowship withdrew and formed the Old Paths fellowship. Some of these brethren and sisters have since realised they are in fact at one with the Dawn fellowship on all matters, including our position on divorce and remarriage, have withdrawn from the Old Paths fellowship and have joined us.

Further evidence of the unsatisfactory nature of the basis of the 'Central' community may be seen from the fact that certain ecclesias deny fellowship to the members of other ecclesias within the same fellowship. From the above, it will be clear that we could not join in fellowship with the 'Central' community on at least the following grounds:

- 1 The doctrinal basis on which fellowship is extended has been undermined.
- 2 The Central community is willing to retain in fellowship those who do not in fact accept the BASF, and therefore they tolerate serious errors.
- 3 Divorce and remarriage is permitted in many ecclesias.

The climate of toleration and compromise thus established nearly 40 years ago bears fruit today, and is seen in the promulgation of 'new thinking' on Bible doctrine, more recent examples of which include denial of the creation account in Genesis. There is an evident inability to deal with errors which is made more serious by the 'ecclesial autonomy' rule. Not only has the incorrect basis of fellowship in 'Central' allowed retention of the earlier errors, other problems have gained considerable ground with the result that the current list of serious errors is formidable as summarised below:

In 1988 an Appeal Committee of 24 Brethren from 6 Central community ecclesias identified the following false ideas being aired within their fellowship:-

- 1) That parts of the Bible are not inspired
- 2) That the Gospel is confined to the saving work of Jesus
- 3) That belief in 'The Trinity' does not affect salvation
- 4) That belief in an immortal Soul is permissible
- 5) That it is alright to believe in a supernatural Devil
- 6) That the faithful will rise immortal
- 7) That the Kingdom of God is within you and is the Church
- 8) That Israel are no longer God's chosen people
- 9) That the Holy Spirit is available today as a power in the heart and mind
- 10) That fellowship with other denominations is both permissible and desirable

Those responsible for promulgating such ideas are still in fellowship.

In 1994 the February and April 'Testimony' and the April 'Christadelphian' have highlighted, through Editorials, the following problems within the Central Community today:-

- a) **There is a movement to produce a new abbreviated statement of faith** because the BASF is too restrictive and complicated.
The New Statement of Faith would deal with, the Nature of God, the Nature of Man, the Return of Christ to reign on the earth and Baptism of Believers.
It would omit the important doctrines of the Nature of Christ and what was achieved by his sacrifice, and the inspiration of the Scriptures as the only source of knowledge about God.
- b) As a consequence of (a) above, there is a **denial of the distinctiveness of the Christadelphian Faith and that we have the Truth**, urging as a result greater co-operation with other Christian denominations.
- c) It is considered that there should be **an open Fellowship with those of other groups of professing Christians** based on tolerance of their beliefs and practices.
- d) **Paid ministers** - A new movement to set up an organisation within Central to pay salaries to Brethren who minister to Ecclesias.
- e) **The Endeavour Movement** - A magazine propounding clear doctrinal error is still being published within Central and its adherents are tolerated in fellowship.

~~~~~

13.15 **At the resurrection - what will be our nature? Will only those who have put on the name of Christ in baptism be raised from the dead?** 1Corinthians 15v51 *"Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep(in death - for some will be alive when Christ comes), but we will all (both the living and the dead that have been raised - the responsible ones) be changed--"* That is - after judgment as it shows in Hebrews 9v27 - because the unrighteous will NOT be changed to immortality - they will stay in their mortal death-stricken state and die the second death - Revelations 20v6. In 1Corinthians 15 the apostle Paul is speaking only of the righteous ones who are responsible which are raised from the dead. Romans 14v10 says, *"But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you show contempt for your brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ."*



Daniel 12v2 *“at that time your people--everyone whose name is found written in the book--will be delivered. Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, (those who have followed God's commands) others to shame and everlasting contempt (those who have not followed God's commands).”* 2 Corinthians 5v10 *“For we must all (responsible) appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due to him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.”* At this stage we all will be mortal. John 5v25-28 - *“I tell you the truth, a time is coming and has now come when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live. For as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to judge because he is the Son of Man. “Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all (the responsible ones - whether they have been baptised or not -but have the knowledge of the True Gospel) who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out--those who have done good (obeyed God's commands) will rise to live, and those who have done evil (the responsible ones) will rise to be condemned.”*

So - those who stand before the judgment seat of Christ MUST be human/mortal, otherwise they cannot be judged worthy of eternal life - or death. We can also see that those who will be raised from the dead (or if they are still living when Christ returns) are those who are responsible - those who have the knowledge of the Gospel of the Kingdom of God, whether they are baptised or not. Those who have not been baptised have not carried out the command as we see in Mark 16v16 *“Whoever believes and is baptised WILL be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.”*

13.16 **“Christadelphian” means “Brother (or sister) of Christ”.**

**Questions**

- 294 Do the Scriptures say that certain men and women are chosen by God?
- 295 Is it necessary to be baptised?
- a)  yes, after knowledge of God's Word
  - b)  no, I have been baptised before
  - c)  yes, when I feel the need to
- 296 What does repentance mean?
- 297 Is there any point in baptising a person who has no knowledge of the Truth?
- 298 What is baptism and what does it symbolise?
- 299 Is baptismal sprinkling sufficient?
- a)  yes
  - b)  no – I have to be baptised in plenty of water
  - c)  there is no need for any other baptism
- 300 At baptism your past life is buried and your sins washed away. Does this mean that you will never sin again?
- 301 How do we obtain forgiveness of our sins?
- a)  by prayer to God through Jesus
  - b)  by crossing our hearts when we sin
  - c)  by my beads
- 302 After baptism we commence a new life. Who is our pattern?
- 303 In what way is Christ our pattern?
- 304 What is the first commandment?
- a)  love the brethren and sisters
  - b)  love your neighbour as yourself
  - c)  love the Lord your God
- 305 What is the second commandment?
- 306 What additional commands have we? Name four.
- 307 Why should we Break Bread on Sunday each week?
- 308 Was the blood Christ shed for the forgiveness of our sins?
- 309 What does the word "saint" mean?
- 310 Should a brother or sister be caught up in the world's affairs, ie pleasures, politics, war, police force, suing at law?
- 311 Do you think it right to court or marry anyone who does not obey the commandments of Christ?
- a)  yes - if they are Christian
  - b)  no – we are to keep separate from the world
  - c)  no – we are not to marry if they are not true believers

- 312 Are we commanded to withdraw from those who will not live lives in accordance with Scriptural teaching?
- 313 Is divorce permissible?
- a)  it is not allowed for any reason
  - b)  it is allowed if both agree
  - c)  it is allowed for adultery
- 314 Do you believe the Bible is wholly inspired?
- 315 Do you believe that knowledge of the Scriptures brings responsibility?
- 316 Do you believe that Christ was tempted as we are and was capable of sinning?
- a)  no – it is not possible that Christ could sin
  - b)  yes – because he had sinful human nature, like ours
  - c)  no – because he was God’s Son
- 317 Do you believe that those who are raised from the dead are still mortal/human?
- 318 What does the word “Christadelphian” mean?
- 319 What is the Kingdom of God and where will it be?
- 320 Do you wish to be baptised and be a brother/sister of Christ?

## **Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13**

### **Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course**

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

#### **OUR NAME**

THE name – " Christadelphian " is more a statement of fact, a description, than just a title, for it declares that anyone bearing that title is one of a family, a family of God, and a brother to Christ. To bear such a name in truth and with honour is to be assured of eternal life and the companion-ship of the rest of that family throughout the ages of eternity. As a point of fact, there have always been " Christadelphians," for is not every son of God a brother of Christ ? Even when Jesus was but the seed of promise, whose birth was as yet four thousand years away, his Father had sons and daughters; Abel, Seth, Noah, Abraham, David and thousands of others were all children of the covenant, all bearing the fair name of children of God and therefore brethren and sisters of Christ.

Paul wrote in Ephesians 3.14, " For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named." There is ample evidence that all those children of God looked forward to the day of the coming of the one who was at once a Son, a Brother, and their Lord. They all looked forward to it, rejoicing to see it. As we bear his Name and look back two thousand years, so they bore it and looked forward.

It is primarily our relationship to God that creates this relationship to His Son. It is this truth that makes the bearing of the name ---Christadelphian " such a serious responsibility, because by its use we claim to be the children of God. So it is written of the early Christians : " Beloved, now are we the sons of God " and every time we say " I am a Christadelphian " it is the equivalent of saying " I am a child of God," so that when he shall appear whose name we bear, who is our Elder Brother, we shall be made like him, possessing the family likeness when of the divine nature. When these many sons of all generations are brought unto glory, it is our earnest prayer that amongst them will be the fruits of the past hundred years of Christadelphianism.

So now let us go back to those years which saw the coining of the name, which saw the revealing of those doctrines and practices which resulted in a number of men and women becoming related to Christ. On a tombstone erected over a grave in America is the following inscription:

**HERE LIES, IN BRIEF REPOSE, WAITING THE RETURN OF THE LORD FROM HEAVEN,  
JOHN THOMAS, M.D.,**

Author of Elpis Israel, Eureka, Anastasis, Phanerosis, and other works, In which he demonstrated the unscriptural character of popular Christianity, and made manifest the nature of

#### **THE LONG-LOST FAITH OF THE APOSTLES**

During a busy life time, by mouth and pen, he contended earnestly for the faith once delivered to the saints, and at his death left behind him as the result of his labours, a body of people, in different parts of the world, known as

**THE CHRISTADELPHIANS**  
**To continue the work begun**

**Born April 12th, 1805 ; Died March 5th, 1871**

---

In his search for the Truth, Dr. Thomas first associated himself with the Baptists, and especially with the Rev. Alexander Campbell who was the leader of a reformation group within the Baptists in America. He soon discovered that much of their teaching was opposed to Bible teaching, and in particular their belief in the immortality of the soul was unscriptural, so he pursued his independent study of God's Word and fearlessly preached all that he found to be in harmony with its teaching. This made many of his former associates, and especially Alexander Campbell, bitter enemies, but there were a few men and women who saw that the Truth was with him, and who became re-immersed into this newly-found faith, and they joined with Bro. Thomas.

At first the name they had was that given to them by their enemies-" Thomasites." This did not suit the Doctor, and so he wrote in the Advocate in 1836 : " As to desiring to be the head of a religious party in this country, I scorn the position as unworthy of a Christian man. When I reflect upon who have been the heads of the religious parties of the world, I feel that I should be degraded were I to be added to their coterie. A man can attain to no higher honour in this state, than to that of being an heir of God and a joint heir with Christ of the promise made to Abraham. The head of a sect ! Contemptible ! I leave such vanities to those whose empty heads are best pleased therewith." Then, two years later, in reply to a charge made by Alexander Campbell : " No, no. To head a party has no charms for me. I know too well the inconstancy of men's allegiance to their leader . . . But there is a party, and a growing one, too, for the Truth as it is in Jesus ... We labour together for our leader, whose name is neither Campbell nor Thomas, but TRUTH. We do not seek to make the impression that this leader is " popular," for he unquestionably is not ... But when I reflect that at the end of three years and a half, all the permanent converts of Jesus, upon whom he chiefly relied, did not exceed twelve ; and that of these one was a traitor, another renounced him with oaths and curses, and all forsook him and fled, I am not distressed at the fewness of the converts I am alleged to have made."

Slowly the Truth, without any identifiable name, became separated from Campbellism and the Baptists. In the Herald for 1851 Dr. Thomas defined himself as a " Bible Christian." He described himself and those with him as " The Association of Bible Christians." This was four years after his baptism into the Truth, and eighteen years after arriving in America. It was in 1852 that an organised meeting was set up in New York (the first organised meeting of the believers) and the true gospel regularly preached. The principles to guide this small congregation were set out in a document headed : " Constitution of the Royal Association of Believers," and they continued to hold this name until the outbreak of the American Civil War in 1861. That war was fought with extreme bitterness between the Northern and Southern States of America. Both sides imposed conscription in order to obtain their armies, and in 1867 many brethren were appealing to Dr. Thomas for help and advice. Their letters read : " Shall we take up arms in defence of our homes, or go to prison ? " The Doctor's reply was definite : " Fear not. We must obey God rather than man. We cannot resist evil or use force." This led to a desire to present a united petition to both Governments, and to have individual certificates sent to each believer as evidence. Under the Act only Quakers were exempt, no other religious body being recognised.

The title Dr. Thomas had adopted for himself and his co-labourers, "The Royal Association of Believers," was considered unsuitable for presentation to the Authorities, so Dr. Thomas wrote : " I did not know a better denomination that could be given to such a class of believers than ' Brethren in Christ.' This declares their true status ; and, as officials prefer words to phrases, the same fact is expressed in another form by the word Christadelphians' or 'Christ's Brethren.' This is the origin, background and sentiments of that name, the name which we, a hundred years later, bear as a privilege and as an honour.

In the months that followed, 1864, the name " Christadelphian--- became generally adopted, and thus small meetings of believers in America and in England soon called themselves "Christadelphians." But let us all realise that long before that name was coined the believers were Christadelphian's. They called themselves brethren and sisters right back to the first century and earlier, stating a truth though not using the words as a title. The sentiments of the name we bear were there long before it was employed as a description. To believe the things concerning the Kingdom of God and the Name of Jesus Christ and be baptised is to become a brother or sister of Christ, is to become a Christadelphian in truth. To bear this name is the greatest privilege it is possible for mortal men and women to have. If, it is truly borne and honourably held, eternal life is assured.  
Ecclesial Magazine – August 1964

# DAWN CHRISTADELPHIAN BIBLE CORRESPONDENCE COURSE

## Part 2

### Contents:



|                                             |      |      |                       |
|---------------------------------------------|------|------|-----------------------|
| Section 1                                   | .... | .... | The Bible             |
| Section 2                                   | .... | .... | God                   |
| Section 3                                   | .... | .... | Creation              |
| Section 4                                   | .... | .... | Sin                   |
| Section 5                                   | .... | .... | Jesus                 |
| Section 6                                   | .... | .... | Christ's Resurrection |
| Part 2 Revision Questions ...Sections 1 - 6 |      |      |                       |
| Memory Verses....                           |      |      |                       |



## Part 2

### Contents continued:



- Section 7 ... Cain to Isaac 3900 –1900 BC
- Section 8 ... History from Jacob to the Law of Moses  
1900-1600 BC
- Section 9 ... History of Israel from the Law  
to the Kings 1600 - 1100 BC
- Section 10 ... Kings of Israel – 1100 – 600 BC
- Section 11 ... New Testament Times
- Section 12 ... Return of Christ
- Section 13 ... Responsibility and Duty
- Dawn Christadelphians the Name and its meaning
- Part 2 Revision Questions ....Sections 7 – 13
- Memory Verses

## **Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13**

### **Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course**

#### **Part 2 Revision Questions – Sections 1 – 6**

- 1 What do you believe about the Bible?
- 2 Is the Bible completely true?
- 3 Is the whole Bible inspired by God?
- 4 What do you understand by “inspiration”?
- 5 Did the writers of the Bible put in their own ideas?
- 6 Give two quotations to prove that God is One.
- 7 Is the trinity a Bible doctrine
- 8 Where does God dwell?
- 9 What does the Bible tell us about God?
- 10 Did God create all things?
- 11 How was man created?
- 12 When the Bible says man was a “living being or a living soul”, what does it mean?
- 13 Is the whole human race descended from Adam and Eve?
- 14 What was the one command given to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden?
- 15 How were Adam and Eve punished when they broke God’s law?
- 16 How does the punishment upon Adam and Eve affect us today?
- 17 What happens to human beings when they die?
- 18 What was meant when God caused Adam and Eve to be covered with skins (Gen.3v21) ?
- 19 What hope did God offer the human race in the Garden of Eden (Gen 3v15)?.
- 20 What is the Spirit of God?
- 21 What is the Holy Spirit?
- 22 Does anyone possess the Holy Spirit today?
- 23 Who are the angels?
- 24 How was Jesus born?
- 25 Who is the father of Jesus?
- 26 Did Jesus have ordinary human nature?
- 27 What is the future work of Jesus
- 28 What do you understand by Satan?
- 29 What do you understand by ‘devil’?
- 30 What do you understand by ‘demons’ or evil spirits?.
- 31 What do you understand by ‘hell’?

**Please send these Revision Questions with your answers back to us  
but remember to keep a reference copy for yourselves**

**MEMORY VERSES**  
**THE FOLLOWING VERSES FROM THE BIBLE SHOULD BE LEARNT BEFORE**  
**BAPTISM**

This is best done by writing the verse or verses out from the Bible a few times, followed by reading it many times and finally writing it out from your memory

~~~~~

Is baptism necessary for salvation?

Mark 16 v 15 - 16

"He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news (Gospel) to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned."

Prove the significance of baptism

Galatians 3 v 27 - 29

"For all of you who were baptised into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

Prove that the Bible is the inspired Word of God **2 Timothy 3 v 15 - 16** or **2 Peter 1 v 20 - 21**

2 Tim. 3v15-16 "And how from infancy you have known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work."

2 Peter 1v20-21 "Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet's own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit."

Prove that God is from everlasting to everlasting **Psalm 90 v 2**

"Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the world, from everlasting to everlasting you are God."

Prove that God is a Unity

Deuteronomy 6 v 4

"Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one."

Where does God dwell?

Matthew 6 v 9

"This, then, is how you should pray: " `Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name,"

What is the Angels work?

Psalm 103 v 20 - 21

"Praise the LORD, you his angels, you mighty ones who do his bidding, who obey his word. Praise the LORD, all his heavenly hosts, you his servants who do his will."

What is the "spirit" of God?

Job 33 v 4 or

Psalm 104 v 30

Job 33v4 "The Spirit of God has made me; the breath of the Almighty gives me life."

Psalm 104v30 "When you send your Spirit, they are created, and you renew the face of the earth."

Prove what the "living soul" means

Genesis 2 v 7

"--the LORD God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being. (soul)"

Prove from the Bible what happens at death **Psalm 146 v 3 - 4 or Eccl. 9 v 5, 10**

Psalm 146v3-4 "Do not put your trust in princes, in mortal men, who cannot save. When their spirit (breath) departs, they return to the ground; on that very day their plans come to nothing."

Eccl. 9v5,10 "For the living know that they will die, but the dead know nothing; they have no further reward, and even the memory of them is forgotten. ¹⁰Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with all your might, for in the grave, where you are going, there is neither working nor planning nor knowledge nor wisdom."

Prove that Jesus was in the Plan and Purpose of God

Genesis 3 v 15

"And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel."

What is our hope of a future life?

1 Corinthians 15 v 19 - 23 or 51 - 57

1 Co.15v19-23 "If only for this life we have hope in Christ, we are to be pitied more than all men. But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: Christ, the firstfruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him."

What is the devil?

Romans 8 v 3; or James 1 v 14 -15; or Hebrews 2 v 14

Romans 8v3 "For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man,"

James 1v14 "but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed. Then, after desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, gives birth to death."

Hebrews 2v14 "Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death--that is, the devil."

Who is the seed of Abraham?

Galatians 3 v 16

"The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. The Scripture does not say "and to seeds," meaning many people, but "and to your seed," meaning one person, who is Christ."

Prove the Gospel was preached to Abraham? **Galatians 3 v 8**

"The Scripture foresaw that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and announced the gospel in advance to Abraham: "All nations will be blessed through you."

Prove how we can be part of these promises **Galatians 3 v 27 - 29**

“for all of you who were baptised into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

The message concerning Zedekiah given to Ezekiel

Ezekiel 21 v 25 - 27

“O profane and wicked prince of Israel, whose day has come, whose time of punishment has reached its climax, this is what the Sovereign LORD says: Take off the turban, remove the crown. It will not be as it was: The lowly will be exalted and the exalted will be brought low. A ruin! A ruin! I will make it a ruin! It will not be restored until he comes to whom it rightfully belongs; to him I will give it.”

An Old Testament verse to which shows Christ's birthplace **Micah 5 v 2**

“But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from of old, from ancient times.”

DAWN CHRISTADELPHIAN BIBLE CORRESPONDENCE COURSE

Part 2

Contents:



| | | | |
|---|------|------|-----------------------|
| Section 1 | .... | .... | The Bible |
| Section 2 | .... | .... | God |
| Section 3 | .... | .... | Creation |
| Section 4 | .... | .... | Sin |
| Section 5 | .... | .... | Jesus |
| Section 6 | .... | .... | Christ's Resurrection |
| Part 2 Revision Questions ...Sections 1 - 6 | | | |
| Memory Verses.... | | | |

Part 2

Contents continued:



- Section 7 ... Cain to Isaac 3900 –1900 BC
- Section 8 ... History from Jacob to the Law of Moses
1900-1600 BC
- Section 9 ... History of Israel from the Law
to the Kings 1600 - 1100 BC
- Section 10 ... Kings of Israel – 1100 – 600 BC
- Section 11 ... New Testament Times
- Section 12 ... Return of Christ
- Section 13 ... Responsibility and Duty
- Dawn Christadelphians the Name and its meaning
- Part 2 Revision QuestionsSections 7 – 13
- Memory Verses

Part 2 – Sections 1 - 13

Dawn Christadelphian Bible Correspondence Course

The Bible is the Inspired Word of God. Anyone who clearly understands its message and obeys its command to be baptised into Christ has, in the mercy of God, the hope of Eternal Life upon this earth, when Jesus returns. This reward is conditional upon living a life in accordance with God and Christ's commandments.

PART 2 - REVISION QUESTIONS

- Q.1 Who is God?
- Q.2 Was Jesus born Mortal or Immortal? Please quote a verse to prove your statement
- Q.3 Have we the gift of the Holy Spirit today? Please quote a verse from the Bible
- Q.4 What do you understand by the devil in the Bible? Describe and quote a verse
- Q.5 What do you understand by the Satan in the Bible? Please quote me:
- Q.6 What is the Kingdom of God? - Describe and quote a verse from the Bible
- Q.7 Is baptism essential to salvation? - Quote a verse to prove your answer
- Q.8 What is the reward of the righteous? - Explain and quote a verse to prove your answer
- Q.9 Give me two verses to prove that the Bible is the Inspired Word of God
- Q.10 Please define the word 'soul' with a reference from the Bible
- Q.11 What happens when we die?
- Q.12 What happens to the wicked (not responsible) when they die
- Q.13 Please define the word 'spirit' with a reference from the Bible
- Q.14 Describe 'Hell' in the Bible with quotations.
- Q.15 Explain the promise to Abraham giving a verse to prove your statement
- Q.16 Where is Abraham now?
- Q.17 Please explain the promise to David quoting verses from the Bible
- Q.18 When did the Kingdom of God in the past end? - please quote a verse
- Q.19 Was and is Jesus part of a trinity?
- Q.20 Explain Armageddon - giving a verse to prove your statement
- Q.21 What or who is Lucifer
- Q.22 What is the Millennium? - quote to prove your statement.
- Q.23 What will be the role of the Saints in the Kingdom? - Give quotation
- Q.24 At the end of the Millennium - what will happen - give quotation
- Q.25 When we are baptised, can we marry those who do not know the True Gospel?
- Q.26 Can we divorce our partner?
- Q.27 Please explain Nebuchadnezzar's Image and the role of the 'rock'
- Q.28 Why should you **NOT** now go to your former Church

Please send these Revision Questions with your answers back to us but remember to keep a reference copy for yourselves

MEMORY VERSES
THE FOLLOWING VERSES FROM THE BIBLE SHOULD BE LEARNT BEFORE
BAPTISM

This is best done by writing the verse or verses out from the Bible a few times, followed by reading it many times and finally writing it out from your memory

~~~~~

*How was Christ conceived?*

**Luke 1 v 34-35**

“How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?” The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”

*Prove that Christ is not equal to God*

**John 14 v 28**

“You heard me say, ‘I am going away and I am coming back to you.’ If you loved me, you would be glad that I am going to the Father, for the Father is greater than I.”

*Prove that Christ was completely dependent on God*

**John 5 v 19**

“Jesus gave them this answer: “I tell you the truth, the Son can do nothing by himself; he can do only what he sees his Father doing, because whatever the Father does the Son also does.”

*Prove that Christ was tempted like we are*

**Hebrews 4 v 15**

“For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are--yet was without sin.”

*Did Christ ever sin?*

**1 Peter 2 v 22**

“He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth.”

*What is Christ's position now?*

**1 Timothy 2 v 5**

“For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus,”

*Prove that Christ will return to the earth*

**Acts 1 v 11**

“Men of Galilee,” they said, “why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”

*Prove that Christ is under the priestly order of Melchizedek*

**Hebrews 5 v 5 – 6**

“So Christ also did not take upon himself the glory of becoming a high priest. But God said to him, “You are my Son; today I have become your Father. And he says in another place, “You are a priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek.”

*Jerusalem will be the capital city in God's Kingdom*

**Isaiah 2 v 3; or 24 v 23 or  
Psalm 48 v 2**

Isaiah 2v3 "Many peoples will come and say, "Come, let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob. He will teach us his ways, so that we may walk in his paths." The law will go out from Zion, the word of the LORD from Jerusalem."

Psalm 48v2 "It is beautiful in its loftiness, the joy of the whole earth. Like the utmost heights of Zaphon is Mount Zion, the city of the Great King."

*Who will rule with Christ in the Kingdom?*

**Revelation 5 v 9 - 10 or  
Daniel 7 v 27**

Revelation 5v9-10 "And they sang a new song: "You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased men for God from every tribe and language and people and nation. You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth."

Daniel 7v27 "Then the sovereignty, power and greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven will be handed over to the saints, the people of the Most High. His kingdom will be an everlasting kingdom, and all rulers will worship and obey him."

*During the Millennium what will the mortal conditions be like?*

**Psalm 72 and  
Isaiah 65v 17-19**

Isaiah 65v17-19 "Behold, I will create new heavens and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind. But be glad and rejoice forever in what I will create, for I will create Jerusalem to be a delight and its people a joy. I will rejoice over Jerusalem and take delight in my people; the sound of weeping and of crying will be heard in it no more."

*After baptism what life should we live?*

**Romans 6 v 1 – 2 or  
James 2 v 14 - 26 or  
John 15 v 14**

Romans 6v1-2 "What shall we say, then? Shall we go on sinning so that grace may increase? By no means! We died to sin; how can we live in it any longer?"

John 15v4 "Remain in me, and I will remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me."

*Prove why we have to be separate from the world*

**2 Corinthians 6 v 14 - 18 or  
1 John 2v15-17;  
John 17v14-17**

2 Cor. 6v14-18 "Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said: "I will live with them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my people." "Therefore come out from them and be separate, says the Lord. Touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you." "I will be a Father to you, and you will be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty."

1 John 2v15-17 "Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For everything in the world--the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does--comes not from the Father but from the world. The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever."

John 17v14-17 ".I have given them your word and the world has hated them, for they are not of the world any more than I am of the world. My prayer is not that you take them out of the world but that you protect them from the evil one. They are not of the world, even as I am not of it. Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth."

*Prove why we cannot divorce our partner*

**Mark 10 v 2 – 9**

"Some Pharisees came and tested him by asking, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife?" "What did Moses command you?" he replied. They said, "Moses permitted a man to write a certificate of divorce and send her away."

"It was because your hearts were hard that Moses wrote you this law," Jesus replied. "But at the beginning of creation God `made them male and female.' `For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh.' So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate."

*Prove that we must not take legal action against another person*

**1 Corinthians 6 v 1-3**

"If any of you has a dispute with another, dare he take it before the ungodly for judgment instead of before the saints? Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if you are to judge the world, are you not competent to judge trivial cases? Do you not know that we will judge angels? How much more the things of this life!"

Dawn Christadelphian, 124 Mullum Mullum Road. North Ringwood 3134.  
Australia

*e-mail: [info@searchthebible.com.au](mailto:info@searchthebible.com.au)*

[www.searchthebible.com.au](http://www.searchthebible.com.au)    [www.open-bible.com](http://www.open-bible.com)